

Author: Mrs. Humphry Ward (1851-1920)

Text type: Prose

Date of composition: 1892

Editions: 1892, 1893, 1894, 1897, 1900, 1901, 1904, 1905, 1906, 1907, 1908, 1909, 1911, 1913, 1925, 1967, 1968, 1986, 2005.

Source text:

Ward, Mrs. Humphry. 1892. *The History of David Grieve*. Vol. 3.
London: Smith, Elder & Co.

e-text:

Access and transcription: January 2013

Number of words: 96,505

Dialect represented: Derbyshire, Yorkshire and Lancashire

Produced by María F. García-Bermejo Giner and Laura Gutiérrez Barrientos

Copyright © 2013– DING, The Salamanca Corpus, Universidad de Salamanca

—∞—
STVDII
SALAMANTIINI

**THE HISTORY
OF
DAVID GRIEVE**

BY

MRS HUMPHRY WARD

AUTHOR OF 'ROBERT ELSMERE'

IN THREE VOLUMES

VOL. III.

LONDON

SMITH, ELDER, & CO., 15 WATERLOO PLACE

1892

[*All rights reserved*]

[NP]

CONTENTS

OF VOL. III

BOOK III

	PAGE
STORM AND STRESS — PART II	1

BOOK IV

MATURITY	121
----------	-----

[NP]

BOOK III

STORM AND STRESS

PART II

[NP]

CHAPTER XII

IN two or three days the English doctor who was attending David strongly advised Mr. Ancrum to get his charge home. The fierce strain his youth had sustained acting through

the nervous system had disordered almost every bodily function, and the collapse which followed Mr. Ancrum's appearance was severe. He would lie in his bed motionless and speechless, volunteered no confidence, and showed hardly any rallying power.

'Get him out of this furnace and that doghole of a room,' said the doctor. 'He has come to grief here somehow — that's plain. You won't make anything of him till you move him.'

When the lad was at last stretched on the deck of a Channel steamer speeding to the English coast, and the sea breeze had brought a faint touch of returning colour to his cheek, he asked the question he had never yet had the physical energy to ask.

'Why did you come, and how did you find me?'

Then it appeared that the old cashier at Heywood's bank, who had taken a friendly interest in the young bookseller since the opening of his account, had dropped

[4]

a private word to John in the course of conversation, which had alarmed that youth not a little. His own last scrawl from David had puzzled and disquieted him, and he straightway marched off to Mr. Ancrum to consult. Whereupon the minister wrote cautiously and affectionately to David asking for some prompt and full explanation of things for his friends' sake. The letter was, as we know, never opened, and therefore never answered. Whereupon John's jealous misery on Louie's account and Mr. Ancrum's love for David had so worked that the minister had broken in upon his scanty savings and started for Paris at a few hours' notice. Once in the Rue Chantal he had come easily on David's track.

Naturally he had inquired after Louie as soon as David was in a condition to be questioned at all. The young man hesitated a moment, then he said resolutely, 'She is married,' and would say no more. Mr. Ancrum pressed the matter a little, but his patient merely shook his head, and the sight of him as he lay there on the pillow was soon enough to silence the minister.

On the evening before they left Paris he called for a telegraph form, wrote a message and paid the reply, but Mr. Ancrum saw nothing of either. When the reply arrived David crushed it in his hand with a strange look, half bitterness, half relief, and flung it behind a piece of furniture standing near.

Now, on the cool, wind-swept deck, he seemed more

[5]

inclined to talk than he had been yet. He asked questions about John and the Lomaxes — he even inquired after Lucy, as to whom the minister who had lately improved an acquaintance with Dora and her father, begun through David, could only answer vaguely that he believed she was still in the south. But he volunteered nothing about his own affairs or the cause of the state in which Mr. Ancrum had found him.

Every now and then, indeed, as they stood together at the side of the vessel, David leaning heavily against it, his words would fail him altogether, and he would be left staring stupidly, the great black eyes widening, the lower lip falling — over the shifting brilliance of the sea.

Ancrum was almost sure too that in the darkness of their last night in Paris there had been, hour after hour, a sound of hard and stifled weeping, mingled with the noises from the street and from the station; and to-day the youth in the face was more quenched than ever, in spite of the signs of reviving health. There had been a woman in the case, of course: Louie might have misbehaved herself; but after all the world is so made that no sister can make a brother suffer as David had evidently suffered — and then there was the revolver! About this last, after one or two restless movements of search, which Mr. Ancrum interpreted, David had never asked, and the minister, timid man of peace that he was, had resold it before leaving.

Well, it was a problem, and it must be left to time.

[6]

Meanwhile Mr. Ancrum was certainly astonished that *any* love affair should have had such a destructive volcanic power with the lad. For it was no mere raw and sensuous nature, no idle and morbid brain. One would have thought that so many different aptitudes and capacities would have kept each other in check.

As they neared Manchester, David grew plainly restless and ill at ease. He looked out sharply for the name of each succeeding town, half turning afterwards, as though to speak to his companion; but it was not till they were within ten minutes of the Central Station that he said —

‘John will want to know about Louie. She is married, — as I told you, — to a French sculptor. I have handed over to her all my father’s money — that is why I drew it out.’

Mr. Ancrum edged up closer to him — all ears — waiting for more. But there was nothing more. ‘And you are satisfied?’ he said at last. David nodded and looked out of window intently. ‘What is the man’s name?’

David either did not or would not hear, and Mr. Ancrum let him alone. But the news was startling. So the boy had stripped himself, and must begin the world again as before! What had that minx been after?

Manchester again. David looked out eagerly from the cab, his hand trembling on his knee, beads of perspiration on his face.

[7]

They turned up the narrow street, and there in the distance to the right was the stall and the shop, and a figure on the steps. Mr. Ancrum had sent a card before them, and John was on the watch.

The instant the cab stopped, and before the driver could dismount, John had opened the door. Putting his head in he peered at the pair inside, and at the opposite seat with his small short-sighted eyes.

‘Where is she?’ he said hoarsely, barring the way.

Mr. Ancrum looked at his companion. David had shrunk back into the corner, with a white hangdog look, and said nothing. The minister interposed.

‘David will tell you all,’ he said gently. ‘First help me in with him, and the bags. He is a sick man.’

With a huge effort John controlled himself, and they got inside. Then he shut the shop door and put his back against it.

‘Tell me where she is,’ he repeated shortly.

‘She is married,’ David said in a low voice, but looking up from the chair on which he had sunk. ‘By now — she is married. I heard by telegram last night that all was arranged for to-day.’

The lad opposite made a sharp inarticulate sound which startled the minister’s ear. Then clutching the handle of the door, he resumed sharply —

‘Who has she married?’

The assumption of the right to question was arrogance

[8]

itself — strange in the dumb, retiring creature whom the minister had hitherto known only as David’s slave and shadow!

‘A French sculptor,’ said David steadily, but propping his head and hand against the counter, so as to avoid John’s stare — ‘a man called Montjoie. I was a brute — I neglected her. She got into his hands. Then I sent for all my money to bribe him to marry her. And he has.’

‘You — you *blackguard!*’ cried John.

David straightened instinctively under the blow, and his eyes met John’s for one fierce moment. Then Mr. Ancrum thought he would have fainted. The minister took rough hold of John by the shoulders.

‘If you can’t stay and hold your tongue,’ he said, ‘you must go. He is worn out with the journey, and I shall get him to bed. Here’s some money: suppose you run to the house round the corner, in Prince’s Street; ask if they’ve got some strong soup, and, if

they have, hurry back with it. Come — look sharp. And — one moment — you've been sleeping here, I suppose? Well, I shall take your room for a bit, if that 'll suit you. This fellow 'll have to be looked after.'

The little lame creature spoke like one who meant to have his way. John took the coin, hesitated, and stumbled out.

For days afterwards there was silence between him and David, except for business directions. He avoided being in the shop with his employer, and would stand

[9]

for hours on the step, ostensibly watching the stall, but in reality doing no business that he could help. Whenever Mr. Ancrum caught sight of him he was leaning against the wall, his hat slouched over his eyes, his hands in his pockets, utterly inert and listless, more like a log than a human being. Still he was no less stout, lumpish, and pink-faced than before. His fate might have all the tragic quality; nature had none the less inexorably endowed him with the externals of farce.

Meanwhile David dragged himself from his bed to the shop and set to work to pick up dropped threads. The customers, who had been formerly interested in him, discovered his return, and came in to inquire why he had been so long away, or, in the case of one or two, whether he had executed certain commissions in Paris. The explanation of illness, however, circulated from the first moment by Mr. Ancrum, and perforce adopted — though with an inward rage and rebellion — by David himself, was amply sufficient to cover his omissions and inattentions, and to ease his resumption of his old place. His appearance indeed was still ghastly. The skin of the face had the tightened, transparent look of weakness; the eyes, reddened and sunk, showed but little of their old splendour between the blue circles beneath and the heavy brows above ; even the hair seemed to have lost its boyish curl, and fell in harsh, troublesome waves over the forehead, whence its owner was perpetually and impatiently thrusting it back. All

[10]

the bony structure of the face had been emphasised at the expense of its young grace and bloom, and the new indications of moustache and beard did but add to its striking and painful black and white. And the whole impression of change was completed by the melancholy aloofness, the shrinking distrust with which eyes once overflowing with the frankness and eagerness of one of the most accessible of human souls now looked out upon the world.

‘Was it fever?’ said a young Owens College professor who had taken a lively interest from the beginning in the clever lad’s venture. ‘Upon my word! you do look pulled down. Paris may be the first city in the world — it is an insanitary hole all the same. So you never found time to inquire after those Moliere editions for me?’

David racked his brains. What was it he had been asked to do? He remembered half an hour’s talk on one of those early days with a bookseller on the Quai Voltaire — was it about this commission? He could not recall.

‘No, sir,’ he said, stammering and flushing. ‘I believe I did ask somewhere, but I can’t remember.’

‘It’s very natural, very natural,’ said the professor kindly. ‘Never mind. I’ll send you the particulars again, and you can keep your eyes open for me. And, look here, take your business easy for a while. You’ll get on—you’re sure to get on — if you only recover your health.’

[11]

David opened the door for him in silence.

The reawakening of his old life in him was strange and slow. When he first found himself back among his books and catalogues, his ledgers and business memoranda, he was bewildered and impatient. What did these elaborate notes, with their cabalistic signs and abbreviations — whether as to the needs of customers, or the

whereabouts of books, or the history of prices — mean or matter? He was like a man who has lost a sense. Then the pressure of certain debts which should have been met out of the money in the bank first put some life into him. He looked into his financial situation and found it grave, though not desperate. All hope of a large and easy expansion of business was, of course, gone. The loss of his capital had reduced him to the daily shifts and small laborious accumulations with which he had begun. But this factor in his state was morally of more profit to him at the moment than any other. With such homely medicines nature and life can often do most for us.

Such was Ancrum's belief, and in consequence he showed a very remarkable wisdom during these early days of David's return.

'As far as I can judge, there has been a bad shake to the heart in more senses than one,' had been the dry remark of the Paris doctor; 'and as for nervous system, it's a mercy he's got any left. Take care of him, but for Heaven's sake don't make an invalid of him — that would be the finish.'

[12]

So that Ancrum offered no fussy opposition to the resumption of the young man's daily Work, though at first it produced a constant battle with exhaustion and depression. But never day or night did the minister forget his charge. He saw that he ate and drank; he enforced a few common-sense remedies for the nervous ills which the moral convulsion had left behind it, ills which the lad in his irritable humiliation would fain have hidden even from him; above all he knew how to say a word which kept Dora and Daddy and other friends away for a time, and how to stand between David and that choked and miserable John.

He had the strength of mind also to press for no confidence and to expect no thanks. He had little fear of any further attempts at suicide, though he would have found it difficult perhaps to explain why. But instinctively he felt that for all practical purposes David had been mad when he found him, and that he was mad no longer. He was wretched, and only a fraction of his mind was in Manchester and in his business — that

was plain. But, in however imperfect a way, he was again master of himself; and the minister bided his time, putting his ultimate trust in one of the finest mental and physical constitutions he had ever known.

In about ten days David took up his hat one afternoon and, for the first time, ventured into the streets. On his return he was walking down Potter Street in a storm of wind and rain, when he ran against some

[13]

one who was holding an umbrella right in front of her and battling with the weather. 'In his recoil he saw that it was Dora.

Dora too looked up, a sudden radiant pleasure in her face overflowing her soft eyes and lips.

'Oh, Mr. Grieve! And are you really better?'

'Yes,' he said briefly. 'May I walk with you a bit?'

'Oh no! — I don't believe you ought to be out in such weather. I'll just come the length of the street with you.'

And she turned and walked with him, chattering fast, and of course, from the point of view of an omniscience which could not have been hers, foolishly. Had he liked Paris? — what he saw of it at least before he had been ill? — and how long had he been ill? Why had he not let Mr. Ancrum or some one know sooner? And would he tell her more about Louie? She heard that she was married, but there was so much she, Dora, wanted to hear.

To his first scanty answers she paid in truth but small heed, for the joy of seeing him again was soon effaced by the painful impression of his altered aspect. The more she looked at him, the more her heart went out to him; her whole being became an effusion of pity and tenderness, and her simplest words, maidenly and self-restrained as she was, were in fact charged with something electric, ineffable. His suffering, his his neighbourhood, her own sympathy — she was taken up,

[14]

overwhelmed by these general impressions. Inferences, details escaped her.

But as she touched on the matter of Louie, and they were now at his own steps, he said to her hurriedly —

‘Walk a little further, and I’ll tell you. John’s in there.’

She opened her eyes, not understanding, and then demurred a little on the ground of his health and the rain.

‘Oh, I’m all right,’ he said impatiently. ‘Look here, will you walk to Chetham’s Library? There’ll be a quiet place there, in the reading room — sure to be — where we can talk.’

She assented, and very soon they were mounting the black oak stairs leading to this old comer of Manchester. At the top of the stairs they saw in the distance, at the end of the passage on to which open the readers’ studies, each with its lining of folios and its oaken lattice, a librarian, who nodded to David, and took a look at Dora. Further on they stumbled over a small boy from the charity school who wished to lionise them over the whole building. But when he had been routed, they found the beautiful panelled and painted reading-room quite empty, and took possession of it in peace. David led the way to an oriel window he had become familiar with in the off-times of his first years at Manchester, and they seated themselves there with a low sloping desk between them, looking out on the

[15]

wide rain-swept yard outside, the buildings of the grammar-school, and the black mass of the cathedral.

Manchester had never been more truly Manchester than on this dark July afternoon, with its low shapeless clouds, its darkness, wind, and pelting rain. David, staring out through the lozenge panes at the familiar gloom beyond, was suddenly

carried by repulsion into the midst of a vision which was an agony — of a spring forest cut by threadlike paths; of a shadeless sun: of a white city steeped in charm, in gaiety.

Dora watched him timidly, new perceptions and alarms dawning in her.

‘You were going to tell me about Louie,’ she said.

He returned to himself, and abruptly turned with his back to the window, so that he saw the outer world no more.

‘You heard that she was married?’

‘Yes.’

‘She has married a brute. It was partly my fault. I wanted to be rid of her; she got in my way. This man was in the same house; I left her to herself, and partly, I believe, to spite me, she went off with him. Then at the last when she wouldn’t leave him I made her marry him. I bribed him to marry her. And he did. I had just enough money to make it worth his while. But he will ill-treat her; and she won’t stay with him. She will go from bad to worse.’

Dora drew back, with her hand on the desk, staring at him with incredulous horror.

[16]

‘But you were ill?’ she stammered.

He shook his head.

‘Never mind my being ill. I wanted you to know, because you were good to her, and I’m not going to be a hypocrite to you. Nobody else need know anything but that she’s married, which is true. If I’d looked after her it mightn’t have happened — perhaps. But I didn’t look after her — I couldn’t.’

His face, propped in his hands, was hidden from her. She was in a whirl of excitement and tragic impression — understanding something, divining more.

‘Louie was always so self-willed,’ she said trembling.

‘Aye. That don’t make it any better. You remember all I told you about her before? You know we didn’t get on; she wasn’t nice to me, and I didn’t suit her, I suppose. But all this year, I don’t know why, she’s been on my mind from morning till night; I’ve always felt sure, somehow, that she would come to harm; and the worrying oneself about her — well! it has seemed *to grow into one’s very bones.*’ — He threw out the last words after a pause, in which he had seemed to search for some phrase wherewith to fit the energy of his feeling. ‘I took her to Paris to keep her out of mischief. I had much rather have gone alone; but she would not ask you to take her in, and I couldn’t leave her with John. Well, then, she got in my way — I told you — and I let her go to the dogs. There — it ‘s done — *done!*’

[17]

He turned on his seat, one hand drumming the desk, while his eyes fixed themselves apparently on the portrait of Sir Humphry Chetham over the carved mantelpiece. His manner was hard and rapid; neither voice nor expression had any of the simplicity or directness of remorse.

Dora remained silent looking at him; her slender hands were pressed tight against either cheek; the tears rose slowly till they filled her grey eyes.

‘It is very sad,’ she said in a low voice.

There was a pause.

‘Yes — it’s sad. So are most things in this world, perhaps. All natural wants seem just to lead us to misery sooner or later. And who gave them to us — who put us here — with no choice but just to go on blundering from one muddle into another?’

Their eyes met. It was as though he had remembered her religion, and could not, in his bitterness, refrain from an indirect fling at it.

As for her, what he said was strange and repellent to her. But her forlorn passion, so long trampled on, cried within her; her pure heart was one prayer, one exquisite throb of pain and pity.

‘Did some one deceive you?’ she asked, so low that the words seemed just breathed into the air. ‘No, — I deceived myself.’

Then as he looked at her an impulse of confession crossed his mind. Sympathy, sincerity, womanly sweetness, these things he had always associated with

[18]

Dora Lomax. Instinctively he had chosen her for a friend long ago as soon as their first foolish spars were over.

But the impulse passed away. He thought of her severity, her religion, her middle-class canons and judgments, which perhaps were all the stricter because of Daddy’s laxities. What common ground between her and his passion, between her and Elise? No! if he must speak — if, in the end, he proved too weak to forbear wholly from speech — let it be to ears more practised, and more human!

So he choked back his words, and Dora felt instinctively that he would tell her no more. Her consciousness of this was a mingled humiliation and relief; it wounded her to feel that she had so little command of him; yet she dreaded what he might say. Paris was a wicked place — so the world reported. Her imagination, sensitive. Christianised, ascetic, shrank from what he might have done. Perhaps the woman shrank too. Instead, she threw herself upon the thought, the bliss, that he was there again beside her, restored, rescued from the gulf, if gulf there had been.

He went back to the subject of Louie, and told her as much as a girl of Dora’s kind could be told of what he himself knew of Louie’s husband. In the course of his two days’ search for them, which had included an interview with Madame Cervin, he had become tolerably well acquainted with Montjoie’s public character and career. Incidentally parts of the story of Louie’s behaviour

[19]

came in, and for one who knew her as Dora did, her madness and wilfulness emerged, could be guessed at, little as the brother intended to excuse himself thereby. How, indeed, should he excuse himself? Louie's character was a fixed quantity to be reckoned on by all who had dealings with her. One might as well excuse oneself for letting a lunatic escape by the pretext of his lunacy. Dora perfectly understood his tone. Yet in her heart of hearts she forgave him — for she knew not what! — became his champion. There was a dry sharpness of self-judgment, a settled conviction of coming ill in all he said which wrung her heart. And how blanched he was by that unknown misery! How should she not pity, not forgive? It was the impotence of her own feeling to express itself that swelled her throat. And poor Lucy, too — ah! poor Lucy.

Suddenly, as he was speaking, he noticed his companion more closely, the shabbiness of the little black hat and jacket, the new lines round the eyes and mouth.

'You have not been well,' he said abruptly. 'How has your father been going on?'

She started and tried to answer quietly. But her nerves had been shaken by their talk, and by that inward play of emotion which had gone on out of his sight. Quite unexpectedly she broke down, and, covering her eyes with one hand, began to sob gently.

'I can't do anything with him now, poor father,' she said, when she could control herself. 'He won't

[20]

listen to me at all. The debts are beginning to be dreadful, and the business is going down fast. I don't know what we shall do. And it all makes him worse — drives him to drink.'

David thought a minute, lifted out of himself for the first time.

'Shall I come to-night to see him?'

'Oh do!' she said eagerly; 'come about nine o'clock. I will tell him — perhaps that will keep him in.'

Then she went into more details than she had yet done; named the creditors who were pressing; told how her church-work, though she worked herself blind night and day, could do but little for them; how both the restaurant and the reading-room were emptying, and she could now get no servants to stay, but Sarah, because of her father's temper.

It seemed to him as he listened that the story, with its sickened hope and on-coming fate, was all in some strange way familiar; it or something like it was to have been expected; for him the strange and jarring thing now would have been to find a happy person. He was in that young morbid state when the mind hangs its own cloud over the universe.

But Dora got up to go, tying on her veil with shaking hands. She was so humbly grateful to him that he was sorry for her — that he could spare a thought from his own griefs for her.

As they went down the dark stairs together, he asked after Lucy, She was now staying with some

[21]

relations at Wakely, a cotton town in the valley of the Irwell, Dora said; but she would probably go back to Hastings for the winter. It was now settled that she and her father could not get on; and the stepmother that was to be — Purcell, however, was taking his time — was determined not to be bothered with her.

David listened with a certain discomfort. 'It was what she did for me,' he thought, 'that set him against her for good and all. Old brute!'

Aloud he said: 'I wrote to her, you know, and sent her that book. She *did write* me a queer letter back — it was all dashes and splashes — about the street-preachings on the beach, and a blind man who sang hymns. I can't remember why she hated him so particularly!'

She answered his faint smile. Lucy was a child for both of them. Then he took her to the door of the Parlour, noticing, as he parted from her, how dingy and neglected the place looked.

Afterwards — directly he had left her — the weight of his pain which had been lightened for an hour descended upon him again, shutting the doors of the senses, leaving him alone within, face to face with the little figure which haunted him day and night. During the days since his return from Paris the faculty of projective imagination, which had endowed his childhood with a second world, and peopled it with the incidents and creatures of his books, had grown to an abnormal strength. Behind the stage on which he was

[22]

now painfully gathering together the fragments of his old life, it created for him another, where, amid scenes richly set and lit with perpetual summer, he lived with Elise, walked with her, watched her, lay at her feet, quarrelled with her, forgave her. His drama did not depend on memory alone, or rather it was memory passing into creation. Within its bounds he was himself and not himself; his part was loftier than any he had ever played in reality; his eloquence was no longer tongue-tied — it flowed and penetrated. His love might be cruel, but he was on her level, nay, her master; he could reproach, wrestle with, command her; and at the end evoke the pardoning flight into each other's arms — confession — rapture.

Till suddenly, poor fool! a little bolt shot from the bow of memory — the image of a *diligence* rattling along a white road — or of black rain-beaten quays, with their lines of wavering lamps — or of a hideous upper room with blue rep furniture where one could neither move nor breathe — would strike his dream to fragments, and as it fell to ruins within him, his whole being would become one tumult of inarticulate cries — delirium — anguish — with which the self at the heart of all seemed to be wrestling for life.

It was so to-day after he left Dora. First the vision, the enchantment — then the agony, the sob of desolation which could hardly be kept down. He saw nothing in the streets. He walked on past the Exchange, where an unusual crowd was gathered, elbowing his way

[23]

through it mechanically, but not in truth knowing that it was there.

When he reached the shop he ran past John, who was reading a newspaper, up to his room and locked the door.

About an hour afterwards Mr. Ancrum came in, all excitement, a batch of papers under his arms.

‘It is going to be war, John! War — I tell you! and such a war. They’ll be beaten, those braggarts, if there ‘s justice in heaven. The streets are all full; I could hardly get here; everybody talking of how it will affect Manchester. Time enough to think about that! What a set of selfish beasts we all are! Where ‘s David?’

‘Come in an hour ago!’ said John sullenly; ‘he went upstairs.’

‘Ah, he will have heard — the placards are all over the place.’

The minister went upstairs and knocked at David’s door.

‘David!’

‘All right,’ said a voice from inside.

‘David, what do you think of the news?’

‘What news?’ after a pause.

‘Why, the war, man! Haven’t you seen the evening paper?’

No answer. The minister stood listening at the door. Then a tender look dawned in his odd grey face.

[24]

‘David, look here, I’ll push you the paper under the door. You’re tired, I suppose — done yourself up with your walk ? ‘

‘I’ll be down to supper,’ said the voice from inside, shortly. ‘Will you push in the paper?’

The minister descended, and sat by himself in the kitchen thinking. He was a wiser man now than when he had gone out, and not only as to that reply of the King of Prussia to the French ultimatum on the subject of the Hohenzollern candidature.

For he had met Barbier in the street. How to keep the voluble Frenchman from bombarding David in his shattered state had been one of Mr. Ancrum’s most anxious occupations since his return. It had been done, but it had been difficult. For to whom did David owe his first reports of Paris if not to the old comrade who had sent him there, found him a lodging, and taught him to speak French so as not to disgrace himself and his country? However, Ancrum had found means to intercept Barbier’s first visit, and had checkmated his attempts ever since. As a natural result, Barbier was extremely irritable. Illness — stuff! The lad had been getting into scrapes — that he would swear.

On this occasion, when Ancrum stumbled across him, he found Barbier, at first bubbling over with the war news; torn different ways; now abusing the Emperor for a *cochon* and a *fou*, prophesying unlimited disaster for France, and sneering at the ranting crowds on the boulevards; the next moment spouting the same

[25]

anti-Prussian madness with which his whole unfortunate country was at the moment infected. In the midst of his gallop of talk, however, the old man suddenly stopped, took off his hat, and running one excited hand through his bristling tufts of grey hair pointed to Ancrum with the other.

‘*Halte là!*’ he said, ‘I know what your young rascal has been after. I know, and I’ll be bound you don’t. Trust a lover for hoodwinking a priest. Come along here.’

And putting his arm through Ancrum's, he swept him away, repeating, as they walked, the substance of a letter from his precious nephew, in which the Barbizon episode as it appeared to the inhabitants of No. 7 Rue Chantal and to the students of Taranne's *atelier de femmes* was related, with every embellishment of witticism and blague that the imagination of a French *rapin* could suggest. Mademoiselle Delaunay was not yet restored, according to the writer, to the atelier which she adorned. '*On criait au scandale,*' mainly because she was such a clever little animal, and the others envied and hated her. She had removed to a studio near the Luxembourg, and Taranne was said to be teaching her privately. Meanwhile Dubois requested his dear uncle to supply him with information as to *l'autre*; it would be gratefully received by an appreciative circle. As for *la soeur de l'autre*, the dear uncle no doubt knew that she had migrated to the studio of Monsieur Montjoie, an artist whose little affairs in the genre had already, before her

[26]

advent, attained a high degree of interest and variety. On a review of all the circumstances, the dear uncle would perhaps pardon the writer if he were less disposed than before to accept those estimable views of the superiority of the English *morale* to the French, which had been so ably impressed upon him during his visit to Manchester.

For after a very short stay at Brussels the nephew had boldly and suddenly pushed over to England, and had spent a fortnight in Barbier's lodgings reconnoitering his uncle. As to the uncle, Xavier had struck him, on closer inspection, as one of the most dissolute young reprobates he had ever beheld. He had preached to him like a father, holding up to him the image of his own absent favourite, David Grieve, as a brilliant illustration of what could be achieved even in this wicked world by morals and capacity. And in the intervals he had supplied the creature with money and amused himself with his *gaminerie* from morning till night. On their parting the uncle had with great frank-ness confessed to the nephew the general opinion he had formed of his character; all the same they were now embarked on a tolerably frequent

correspondence; and Dubois' ultimate chance of obtaining his uncle's savings, on the chase of which he had come to England, would have seemed to the cool observer by no means small.

'But now, look here,' said Barbier, taking off his spectacles to wipe away the 'merry tear' which dimmed them, after the recapitulation of Xavier's last letter, 'no

[27]

more nonsense! I come and have it out with that young man. I sent him to Paris, and I'll know what he did there. He's not made of burnt sugar. Of course he 's broken his heart — we all do. Serve him right.'

'It 's easy to laugh,' said Ancrum dryly, 'only these young fellows have sometimes an uncomfortable way of vindicating their dignity by shooting themselves.'

Barbier started and looked interrogative.

'Now suppose you listen to me,' said the minister.

And the two men resumed their patrol of Albert Square while Ancrum described his rescue of David. The story was simply told but impressive. Barbier whistled, stared, and surrendered. Nay, he went to the other extreme. He loved the absurd, but he loved the romantic more. An hour before, David's adventures had been to him a subject of comic opera. As Ancrum talked, they took on 'the grand style,' and at the end he could no more have taken liberties with his old pupil than with the hero of the *Nuit de Mai*. He became excited, sympathetic, declamatory, tore open old sores, and Mr. Ancrum had great difficulty in getting rid of him.

So now the minister was sitting at home meditating. Through the atmosphere of mockery with which Dubois had invested the story he saw the outlines of it with some clearness.

[28]

IN the midst of his meditations, however, the minister did not forget to send John out for David's supper, and when David appeared, white, haggard, and exhausted, it was to find himself thought for with a care like a woman's. The lad, being sick and irritable, showed more resentment than gratitude; pushed away his food, looking sombrely the while at the dry bread and tea which formed the minister's invariable evening meal as though to ask when he was to be allowed his rational freedom again to eat or fast as he pleased. He scarcely answered Ancrum's remarks about the war, and finally he got up heavily, saying he was going out.

'You ought to be in your bed,' said Ancrum, protesting almost for the first time, 'and it's there you will be — tied by the leg — if you don't take a decent care of yourself.'

David took no notice and went. He dragged himself to the German Athenaeum, of which he had become a member in the first flush of his inheritance. There were the telegrams from Paris, and an eager crowd reading and discussing them. As he pushed his way in at last and read, the whole scene rose before him

[29]

as though he were there — the summer boulevards with their trees and kiosks, the moving crowds, the shouts, the 'Marseillaise' — the blind infectious madness of it all. And one short fortnight ago, what man in Europe could have guessed that such a day was already on the knees of the gods?

Afterwards, on the way to the Parlour, he talked to Elise about it, — placing her on the boulevards with the rest, and himself beside her to guard her from the throng. Hour by hour, this morbid gift of his, though it tortured him, provided an outlet for passion, saved him from numbness and despair.

When he got to Dora's sitting-room he found Daddy sitting there, smoking sombrely over the empty grate. He had expected a flood of questions, and had steeled himself to meet them. Nothing of the sort. The old man took very little notice of him and his travels. Considering the petulant advice with which Daddy had sent him off,

David was astonished and, in the end, piqued. He recovered the tongue which he had lost for Ancrum, and was presently discussing the war like anybody else. Reminiscences of the talk amid which he had lived during those Paris weeks came back to them; and he repeated some of them which bore on the present action of Napoleon III. and his ministry, with a touch of returning fluency. He was, in fact, playing for Daddy's attention.

Daddy watched him silently with a wild and furtive eye. At last, looking round to see whether Dora was

[30]

there, and finding that she had gone out, he laid a lean long hand on David's knee.

'That'll do, Davy. Davy, why were you all that time away?'

The young man drew himself up suddenly, brought back to realities from this first brief moment of something like forgetfulness. He tried for his common excuse of illness; but it stuck in his throat.

'I can't tell you, Daddy,' he said at last, slowly. 'I might tell you lies, but I won't. It concerns myself alone.'

Daddy still bent forward, his peaked wizard's face peering at his companion.

'You've been in trouble, Davy?'

'Yes, Daddy. But if you ask me questions I shall go.'

He spoke with a sudden fierce resolution.

Daddy paid no attention. He threw himself back in his chair with a long breath.

'Bedad, and I knew it, Davy! But sorrow a bit o' pity will you get out o' me, my boy — sorrow a bit!'

He lay staring at his companion with a glittering hostile look.

'By the powers!' he said presently, 'to be a gossoon of twenty again and troubled about a woman!'

David sprang up.

‘Well, Daddy, I’ll bid you good night! I wanted to hear something about your own affairs, which don’t

[31]

seem to be flourishing. But I’ll wait till Miss Dora’s at home.’

‘Sit down, sit clown again!’ cried Lomax angrily, catching him by the arm. ‘I’ll not meddle with you. Yes, we’re in a bad way, a deuced bad way, if you listen to Dora. If it weren’t for her I’d have walked myself off long ago and let the devil take the creditors.’

David sat down and tried to get at the truth. But Daddy turned restive, and now invited the traveller’s talk he had before repelled. He fell into his own recollections of the Paris streets in ’48, and his vanity enjoyed showing this slip of a fellow that old Lomax was well acquainted with France and French politics before he was born.

Presently Dora came in, saw that her father had been beguiled into foregoing his usual nocturnal amusements, and looked soft gratitude at David. But as for him, he had never realised so vividly the queer aloof-ness and slipperiness of Daddy’s nature, nor the miserable insecurity of Dora’s life. Such men were not meant to have women depending on them.

He went downstairs pondering what could be done for the old vagabond. Drink had indeed made ravages since he had seen him last. For Dora’s sake the young man recalled with eagerness some statements and suggestions in a French treatise on ‘L’Alcoolisme’ he chanced to have been turning over among his foreign scientific stock. Dora, no doubt, had invoked the parson; he would endeavour to bring in the doctor. And there

[32]

was a young one, a frequenter of the stall in Birmingham Street, not as yet overburdened with practice, who occurred to him as clever and likely to help.

Nor did he forget his purpose. The very next morning he got hold of the young man in question. Out came the French book, which contained the record of a famous Frenchman's experiments, and the two hung over it together in David's little back room, till the doctor's views of booksellers and their probable minds were somewhat enlarged, and David felt something of the old intellectual glow which these scientific problems of mind and matter had awakened in him during the winter. Then he walked his physician off to Daddy during the dinner hour and boldly introduced him as a friend. The young doctor, having been forewarned, treated the situation admirably, took up a jaunty and jesting tone, and, finally, putting morals entirely aside, invited Daddy to consider himself as a scientific case, and deal with himself as such for the benefit of knowledge.

Daddy was feeling ill and depressed; David struck him as an 'impudent varmint,' and the doctor as little better; but the lad's solicitude nevertheless flattered the old featherbrain, and in the end he fell into a burst of grandiloquent and self-excusing confidence. The doctor played him; prescribed; and when he and David left together it really seemed as though the old man from sheer curiosity about and interest in his own

[33]

symptoms would probably make an attempt to follow the advice given him.

Dora came in while the three were still joking and discussing. Her face clouded as she listened, and when David and the doctor left she gave them a cool and shrinking good-bye which puzzled David.

Daddy, however, after a little while, mended considerably, developed an enthusiasm for his self-appointed doctor, and, what was still better, a strong excitement about his own affairs. When it came to the stage of a loan for the meeting of the more pressing liabilities, of fresh and ingenious efforts to attract customers, and of a certain gleam of returning prosperity, David's concern for his old friend very much dropped again. His former vivid interest in the human scene and the actors in it, as such, was not yet recovered; in these weeks weariness and lassitude overtook each reviving impulse and faculty in turn.

He was becoming more and more absorbed, too, by the news from France. Its first effect upon him was one of irritable repulsion. Barbier and Hugo had taught him to loathe the Empire; and had not he and she read *Les Châtiments* together, and mocked the Emperor's carriage as it passed them in the streets? The French telegrams in the English papers, with their accounts of the vapouring populace, the wild rhetoric in the Chamber, and the general outburst of *fanfaronnade*, seemed to make the French nation one with the Empire in its worst aspects, and, as we can all remember, set

[34]

English teeth on edge. David devoured the papers day by day, and his antagonism grew, partly because, in spite of that strong gravitation of his mind towards things expansive, emotional, and rhetorical, the essential paste of him was not French but English — but mostly because of other and stronger reasons of which he was hardly conscious. During that fortnight of his agony in Paris all that sympathetic bond between the great city and himself which had been the source of so much pleasure and excitement to him during his early days with Elise had broken down. The glamour of happiness torn away, he had seen, beneath the Paris of his dream, a greedy brutal Paris from which his sick senses shrank in fear and loathing. The grace, the spell, was gone — he was alone and miserable! — and amid the gaiety, the materialism, the selfish vice of the place he had moved for days, an alien and an enemy, the love within him turning to hate.

So now his mortal pain revenged itself. They would be beaten — this depraved and enervated people! — and his feverish heart rejoiced. But Elise? His lips quivered. What did the war matter to her except so far as its inconveniences were concerned? What had la *patrie* any more than *l'amour* to do with art? He put the question to her in his wild evening walks. It angered him that as the weeks swept on, and the great thunderbolts began to fall — Wissembourg, Forbach, Worth — his imagination would sometimes show her to him agitated and in tears. No pity for him! why

[35]

this sorrow for France? Absurd! let her go paint while the world loved and fought. In '48, while monarchy and republic were wrestling it out in the streets of Paris, was not the landscape painter Chintreuil quietly sketching all the time just outside one of the gates of the city? There was the artist for you.

Meanwhile the growing excitement of the war, heightened and poisoned by this reaction of his personality, combined with his painful efforts to recover his business to make him for a time more pale and gaunt than ever. Ancrum remonstrated in vain. He would go his way.

One evening — it was the day after Worth — he was striding blindly up the Oxford Road when he ran against a man at the corner of a side street. It was Barbier, coming out for the last news.

Barbier started, swore, caught him by the arm, then fell back in amazement.

'C'est toi? — bon Dieu!'

David, who had hitherto avoided his old companion with the utmost ingenuity, began hurriedly to inquire whether he was going to look at the evening's telegram.

'Yes — no — what matter? You can tell me. David, my lad, Ancrum told me you had been ill, but ——'

The old man slipped his arm through that of the youth and looked at him fixedly. His own face was all furrowed and drawn, the eyes red.

'Oui; tu es changé,' he said at last with a sudden

[36]

quivering breath, almost a sob, 'like everything, — like the world!'

And hanging down his head he drew the lad on, down the little street, towards his lodging.

'Come in! I'll ask no questions. Oh, come in! I have the French papers; for three hours I have been reading them alone. Come in or I shall go mad!'

And they discussed the war, the political prospect, and Barbier's French letters till nearly midnight. All the exile's nationality had revived, and so lost was he in weeping over France he had scarcely breath left wherewith to curse the Empire. In the presence of a grief so true, so poignant, wherein all the man's little tricks and absurdities had for the moment melted out of sight, David's own seared and bitter feeling could find no voice. He said not a word that could jar on his old friend. And Barbier, like a child, took his sympathy for granted and abused the 'heartless hypocritical 'English press to him with a will.

The days rushed on. David read the English papers in town, then walked up late to Barbier's lodgings to read a French batch and talk. Gravelotte was over, the siege was approaching. In that strange inner life of his, David with Elise beside him looked on at the crashing trees in the Bois de Boulogne, at the long lines of carts laden with household stuff and fugitives from the *zone militaire* flocking into Paris, at the soldiers and horses camping in the Tuileries Gardens, at the distant smoke-clouds amid the woods

[37]

of Issy and Meudon, as village after village flamed to ruins.

One night — it was a day or two after Sedan — in a corner of the *Constitutionnel*, he found a little paragraph: —

'M. Henri Regnault and M. Clairin, leaving their studio at Tangiers to the care of the French Consul, have returned to Paris to offer themselves for military service, from which, as holder of *the prix de Rome*, M. Regnault is legally exempt. To praise such an act would be to insult its authors. France — our bleeding France! — does but take stern note that her sons are faithful.'

David threw the paper down, made an excuse to Barbier, and went out. He could not talk to Barbier, to whom everything must be explained from the beginning, and his heart was full. He wandered out towards Fallowfield under a moon which gave beauty and magic even to these low, begrimed streets, these jarring, incongruous

buildings, thinking of Regnault and that unforgotten night beside the Seine. The young artist's passage through the Louvre, the towering of his great head above the crowd in the 'Trois Rats,' and that outburst under the moonlight — everything, every tone, every detail, returned upon him.

'The great France — the undying France —'

And now for France — ah! — David divined the eagerness, the passion, with which it had been done. He was nearer to the artist than he had been two months

[38]

before — nearer to all great and tragic things. His recognition of the fact had in it the start of a strange joy.

So moved was he, and in such complex ways, that as he thought of Regnault with that realising imagination which was his gift, the whole set of his feeling towards France and the war wavered and changed. The animosity, the drop of personal gall in his heart, disappeared, conjured by Regnault's look, by Regnault's act. The one heroic figure he had seen in France began now to stand to him for the nation. He walked home doing penance in his heart, passionately renewing the old love, the old homage, in this awful presence of a stricken people at bay.

And Elise came to him, in the moonlight, leaning upon him, with soft, approving eyes —

Ah! where was she — where — in this whirlwind of the national fate? where was her frail life hidden? was she still in this Paris, so soon to be 'begirt with armies'?

Four days later Barbier sent a note to Ancrum: 'Come and see me this afternoon at six o'clock. Say nothing to Grieve.'

A couple of hours afterwards Ancrum came slowly home to Birmingham Street, where he was still lodging. David had just put up the shop-shutters, John had departed, and his employer was about to retire to supper and his books in the back kitchen.

Ancrum went in and stood with his back to the fire

[39]

which John had just made for the kettle and the minister's tea, when David came in with an armful of books and shut the door behind him. Ancrum let him put down his cargo, and then walked up to him.

'David,' he said, laying his hand with a timid gesture on the other's shoulder, 'Barbier has had some letters from Paris to-day — the last he will get probably — and among them a letter from his nephew.'

David started, turned sharp round, shaking off the hand.

'It contains some news which Barbier thinks you ought to know. Mademoiselle Elise Delaunay has married suddenly — married her cousin, Mr. Pimodan, a young doctor.'

The shock blanched every atom of colour from David's face. He tried wildly to control himself, to brave it out with a desperate 'Why not?' But speech failed him. He walked over to the mantelpiece and leant against it. The room swam with him, and the only impression of which for a moment or two he was conscious was that of the cheerful singing of the kettle.

'She would not leave Paris,' said Ancrum in a low voice, standing beside him. 'People tried to persuade her — nothing would induce her. Then this young man, who is said to have been in love with her for years, urged her to marry him — to accept his protection really, in view of all that might come. Dubois thinks she refused several times, but anyway two days

[40]

ago they were married, civilly, with only the legal witnesses.'

David moved about the various things on the mantelpiece with restless fingers. Then he straightened himself.

'Is that all?' he asked, looking at the minister.

‘All,’ said Ancrum, who had, of course, no intention of repeating any of Dubois’ playful embroideries on the facts. ‘You will be glad, won’t you, that she should have some one to protect her in such a strait?’ — he added, after a minute’s pause, his eyes on the fire.

‘Yes,’ said the other after a moment. ‘Thank you. Won’t you have your tea?’

Mr. Ancrum swallowed his emotion, and they sat down to table in silence. David played with some food, took one thing up after another, laid it down, and at last sprang up and seized his hat.

‘Going out again?’ asked the minister, trembling, he knew not why.

The lad muttered something. Instinctively the little lame fellow, who was closest to the door, rushed to it and threw himself against it.

‘David, don’t — don’t go out alone — let me go with you!’

‘I want to go out alone,’ said David, his lips shaking. ‘Why do you interfere with me?’

‘Because ——’ and the short figure drew itself up, the minister’s voice took a stern deep note, ‘because when a man has once contemplated the sin of self-murder,

[41]

those about him have no right to behave as though he were still like other innocent and happy people!’

David stood silent a moment, every limb trembling. Then his mouth set, and he made a step forward, one arm raised.

‘Oh, yes!’ cried Ancrum, ‘you may fling me out of the way. My weakness and deformity are no match for you. Do, if you have the heart! Do you think I don’t know that I rescued you from despair — that I drew you out of the very jaws of death? Do you think I don’t guess that the news I have just given you withers the heart in your breast? You imagine, I suppose, that because I am deformed and a Sunday- school teacher, because I think something of religion, and can’t read your French books, that I cannot

enter into what a *man* is and feels. Try me! When you were a little boy in my class, *my* life was already crushed in me — my tragedy was over. I have come close to passion and to sin; I'm not afraid of yours! You are alive here to-night, David Grieve, because I went to look for you on the mountains — lost sheep that you were — and found you, by God's mercy. You never thanked me — I knew you couldn't. Instead of your thanks I demand your confidence, here — now. Break down this silence between us. Tell me what you have done to bring your life to this pass. You have no father — I speak in his place, and I *deserve* that you should trust and listen to me!

[42]

David looked at him with amazement — at the worn misshapen head thrown haughtily back — at the arms folded across the chest. Then his pride gave way, and that intolerable smart within could no longer hide itself. His soul melted within him; tears began to rain over his cheeks. He tottered to the fire and sat down, instinctively spreading his hands to the blaze, that word 'father' echoing in his ears; and by midnight Mr. Ancrum knew all the story, or as much of it as man could tell to man.

From this night of confession and of storm there emerged at least one result — the beginnings of a true and profitable bond between David and Ancrum. Hitherto there had been expenditure of interest and affection on the minister's side, and a certain responsiveness and friendly susceptibility on David's; but no true understanding and contact, mind with mind. But in these agitated hours of such talk as belongs only to the rare crises of life, not only did Ancrum gain an insight into David's inmost nature, with all its rich, unripe store of feelings and powers, deeper than any he had possessed before, but David, breaking through the crusts of association, getting beyond and beneath the Sunday-school teacher and minister, came for the first time upon the real man in his friend, apart from trappings — cast off the old sense of pupilage, and found a brother instead of a monitor.

There came a moment when Ancrum, laying his

[43]

hand on David's knee, told his own story in a few bare sentences, each of them, as it were, lightning on a dark background, revealing some few things with a ghastly plainness, only to let silence and mystery close again upon the whole. And there came another moment when the little minister, carried out of himself, fell into incoherent sentences, full of obscurity, yet often full of beauty, in which for the first time David came near to the living voice of religion speaking in its purest, intensest note. Christ was the burden of it all; the religion of pain, sacrifice, immortality; the religion of chastity and self-repression.

'Life goes from test to test, David; it's like any other business — the more you know the more's put on you. And this test of the man with the woman — there's no other cuts so deep. Aye, it parts the sheep from the goats. A man's failed in it — lost his footing — rolled into hell, before he knows where he is. "On this stone if a man fall" — I often put those words to it —there's all meanings in Scripture. Yes, you've stumbled, David — stumbled badly, but not more. There's mercy in it! You must rise again — you can. Accept yourself; accept the sin even; bear with yourself and go forward. That's what the Church says. Nothing can be undone, but break your pride, do penance, and all can be forgiven.

'But you don't admit the sin? A man has a right to the satisfaction of his own instincts. You asked a free consent and got it. What is law but a convention for

[44]

miserable people who don't know how to love ? Who was injured?

'David, that's the question of a fool. Were you and she the first man and woman in the world that ever loved? That's always the way; each man imagines the matter is still for his deciding, and he can no more decide it than he can tamper with the fact that fire burns or water drowns. All these centuries the human animal has fought with the human soul. And step by step the soul has registered her victories. She has won

them only by feeling for the law and finding it — un- covering, bringing into light, the firm rocks beneath her feet. And on these rocks she rears her landmarks — marriage, the family, the State, the Church. Neglect them, and you sink into the quagmire from which the soul of the race has been for generations struggling to save you. Dispute them! overthrow them — yes if you can! You have about as much chance with them as you have with the other facts and laws amid which you live — physical or chemical or biological.

‘I speak after the manner of men. If I were to speak after the manner of a Christian, I should say other things. I should ask how a man dare pluck from the Lord’s hand, for his own wild and reckless use, a soul and body for which He died; how he, the Lord’s bondsman, *dare* steal his joy, carrying it off by himself into the wilderness, like an animal his prey, instead of asking it at the hands, and under the blessing, of his Master; how *he dare* — a man under orders, and

[45]

member of the Lord’s body — forget the whole in his greed for the one — eternity in his thirst for the present!

‘But no matter. Christ is nothing to you, nor Scripture, nor the Church ——’

The minister broke off abruptly, his lined face working with emotion and prayer. David said nothing. In this stage of the conversation — the stage, as it were, of judgment and estimate — he could take no part. The time for it with him had not yet come. He had exhausted all his force in the attempt to explain himself — an attempt which began in fragmentary question and answer, and ended on his part in the rush of a confidence, an ‘Apologia,’ representing, in truth, that first reflex action of the mind upon experience, whence healing and spiritual growth were ultimately to issue. But for the moment he could carry the process no farther. He sat crouched over the flickering fire, saying nothing, letting Ancrum soliloquise as he pleased. His mind surged to and fro, indeed, as Ancrum talked between the poles of repulsion and response. His nature was not as Ancrum’s, and every now and then the quick critical intellect flashed through

his misery, detecting an assumption, probing an hypothesis. But in general his *feeling* gave way more and more. That moral sensitiveness in him which in its special nature was a special inheritance, the outcome of a long individualist development under the conditions of English Protestantism, made him from the first the natural prey

[46]

of Ancrum's spiritual passion. As soon as a true contact between them was set up, David began to feel the religious temper and life in Ancrum draw him like a magnet. Not the forms of the thing, but the thing itself. In it, or something like it, as he listened, his heart suspected, for the first time, the only possible refuge from the agony of passion, the only possible escape from this fever of desire, jealousy, and love, in which he was consumed.

At the end he let Ancrum lead him up to bed and give him the bromide the Paris doctor had prescribed. When Ancrum softly put his head in, half an hour later, he was heavily asleep. Ancrum's face gleamed; he stole into the room carrying a rug and a pillow; and when David woke in the morning it was to see the twisted form of the little minister stretched still and soldier-like beside him on the floor.

[47]

CHAPTER XIV

FROM that waking David rose and went about his work another man. As he moved about in the shop or in the streets, he was conscious of a gulf between his present self and his self of yesterday, which he could hardly explain. Simply the whole atmosphere and temperature of the soul was other, was different. He could have almost supposed that some process had gone on within him during the unconsciousness of sleep, of which he was now feeling the results; which had carried him on, without his knowing it, to a point in the highroad of life, far removed from that point where he had stood when

his talk with Ancrum began. That world of enervating illusion, that 'kind of ghastly dreaminess,' as John Sterling called it, in which since his return he had lived with Elise, was gone, he knew not how — swept away like a cloud from the brain, a mist from the eyes. The sense of catastrophe, of things irrevocable and irreparable, the premature ageing of the whole man, remained — only the fever and the restlessness were past. Memory, indeed, was not affected. In some sort the scenes of his French experience would be throughout his life a permanent element in consciousness; but the

[48]

persons concerned in them were dead — creatures of the past. He himself had been painfully re-born, and Pimodan's wife had no present personal existence for him. He turned himself deliberately to his old life, and took up the interests of it again one by one, but, as he soon discovered, with an insight, a power, a comprehension which had never yet been his. Amoral and spiritual life destined to a rich development practically began for him with this winter — this awful winter of the agony of France.

His thoughts were often occupied now with Louie, but in a saner way. He could no longer, without morbidity, take on himself the whole responsibility of her miserable marriage. Human beings after all are what they make themselves. But the sense of his own share in it, and the perception of what her future life was likely to be, made him steadily accept beforehand the claims upon him which she was sure to press.

He had written to her early in September, when the siege was imminent, offering her money to bring her to England, and the protection of his roof during the rest of the war. And by a still later post than that which brought the news of Elise's marriage arrived a scrawl from Louie, written from a country town near Toulouse, whither she and Montjoie had retreated — apparently the sculptor's native place.

The letter was full of complaints — complaints of the war, which was being mismanaged by a set of rogues and fools who deserved stringing to the nearest tree;

[49]

complaints of her husband, who was a good-for-nothing brute; and complaints of her own health. She was expecting her confinement in the spring; if she got through it — which was not likely, considering the way in which she was treated — she should please herself about staying with such a man. He should not keep her for a day if she wanted to go. Meanwhile David might send her any money he could spare. There was not much of the six hundred left — that she could tell him; and she could not even screw enough for baby-clothes out of her husband. Very likely there would not be enough to pay for a nurse when her time came. Well, then she would be out of it — and a good job too.

She wished to be remembered to Dora; and Dora was especially to be told again that she needn't suppose St. Damian's was a patch on the real Catholic churches, because it wasn't. She — Louie — had been at the Mid-night Mass in Toulouse Cathedral on Christmas Eve. That was something like. And down in the crypt they had a 'Bethlehem' — the sweetest thing you ever saw. There were the shepherds, and the wise men, and the angels — dolls, of course, but their dresses were splendid, and the little Jesus was dressed in white satin, embroidered with gold — *old* embroidery, tell Dora.

To this David had replied at once, sending money he could ill spare, and telling her to keep him informed of her whereabouts.

But the months passed on, and no more news arrived. He wrote again vid Bordeaux, but with no

[50]

result, and could only wait patiently till that eagle's grip, in which all French life was stifled, should be loosened.

Meanwhile his relation to another human being, whose life had been affected by the French episode, passed into a fresh phase. Two days after the news of Elise's marriage had reached him, he and John had just shut up the shop, and the young master

was hanging over the counter under the gas, heavily conning a not very satisfactory business account.

John came in, took his hat and stick from a corner, and threw David a gruff 'good night.'

Something in the tone struck David's sore nerves like a blow. He turned abruptly —

'Look here, John! I can't stand this kind of thing much longer. Hadn't we better part? You've learnt a lot here, and I'll see you get a good place. You — you rub it in too long!'

John stood still, his big rough hands beginning to shake, his pink cheeks turning a painful crimson.

'You — you never said a word to me!' he flung out at last, incoherently, resentfully.

'said a word to you? What do you mean? I told you the truth, and I would have told you more, if you hadn't turned against me as though I had been the devil himself. Do you suppose you are the only person who came to grief because of that French time? *Good God!*'

The last words came out with a low exasperation.

[51]

The young man leant against the counter, looking at his assistant with bitter, indignant eyes.

John first shrank from them, then his own were drawn to meet them. Even his slow perceptions, thus challenged, realised something of the truth. He gave way — as David might have made him give way long before, if his own misery had not made him painfully avoid any fresh shock of speech.

'Well!' said John, slowly, with a mighty effort; 'I'll not lay it agen you ony more. I'll say that. But if you want to get rid of me, you can. Only you'll be put to 't wi' t' printing.'

The two young fellows surveyed each other. Then suddenly David said, pushing him to the door:

‘You’re a great ass, John — get out, and good night to you.’

But next day the atmosphere was cleared, and, with inexpressible relief on both sides, the two fell back into the old brotherly relation. Poor John! He kept an old photograph of Louie in a drawer at his lodging, and, when he came home to bed, would alternately weep over and denounce it. But, all the same, his interest in David’s printing ventures was growing keener and keener, and whenever business had been particularly exciting during the day, the performance with the photograph was curtailed or omitted at night. Let no scorn, however, be thought, on that account, of a true passion! — which had thriven on unkindness, and did but yield to the slow mastery of time.

[52]

The war thundered on. To Manchester, and to the cotton and silk industries of Lancashire generally, the tragedy of France meant on the whole a vast boom in trade. So many French rivals crippled — so much ground set free for English enterprise to capture — and, meanwhile, high profits for a certain number at least of Manchester and Macclesfield merchants, and brisk wages for the Lancashire operative, especially for the silk-weavers. This, with of course certain drawbacks and exceptions, was the aspect under which the war mainly presented itself to Lancashire. Meanwhile, amid these teeming Manchester streets with their clattering luries and overflowing warehouses, there was at least one Englishman who took the war hardly, in whom the spectacle of its wreck and struggle roused a feeling which was all moral, human, disinterested.

What was Regnault doing? David kept a watch on the newspapers, of which the Free Library offered him an ample store; but there was no mention of him in the English press that he could discover, and Barbier, of course, got nothing now from Paris.

Christmas was over. The last month of the siege, that hideous January of frost and fire, rushed past, with its alternations of famine within and futile battle without —

Europe looking on appalled at this starved and shivering Paris, into which the shells were raining. At last — the 27th! — the capitulation! All was over; the German was master in Europe, and France lay at the feet of her conqueror.

[53]

Out to all parts streamed the letters which had been so long delayed. Barbier and David, walking together one bitter evening towards Barbier's lodgings, silent, with hanging heads, met the postman on Barbier's steps, who held out a packet. The Frenchman took it with a cry; the two rushed upstairs and fell upon the letters and papers it contained.

There — while Barbier sat beside him, groaning over the conditions of peace, over the enthronement of the Emperor-King at Versailles, within sight of the statue of Louis Quatorze, now cursing '*ces imbéciles du gouvernement!*' and now wiping the tears from his old cheeks with a trembling hand — David read the news of the fight of Buzenval, and the death of Regnault.

It seemed to him that he had always foreseen it — that from the very beginning Regnault's image in his thought had been haloed with a light of tragedy and storm — a light of death. His eyes devoured the long memorial article in which a friend of Regnault's had given the details of his last months of life. Barbier, absorbed in his own grief, heard not a sound from the corner where his companion sat crouched beneath the gas.

Everything — the death and the manner of it — was to him, as it were, in the natural order — fitting, right, such as might have been expected. His heart swelled to bursting as he read, but his eyes were dry.

This, briefly, was the story which he read.

[54]

Henri Regnault re-entered Paris at the beginning of September. By the beginning of October he was on active service, stationed now at Asnières, now at Colombes. In October or November he became engaged to a young girl, with whom he had been for long devotedly in love — ah! David thought of that sudden smile — the ‘open door!’ Their passion, cherished under the wings of war, did but give courage and heroism to both. Yet he loved most humanly! One night, in an interval of duty, on leaving the house where his *fiancée* lived, he found the shells of the bombardment falling fast in the street outside. He could not make up his mind to go — might not ruin befall the dear house with its inmates at any moment? So he wandered up and down outside for hours in the bitter night, watching, amid the rattle of the shells and the terrified cries of women and children from the houses on either side. At last, worn out and frozen with cold, but still unable to leave the spot, he knocked softly at the door he had left. The *concierge* came. ‘Let me lie down awhile on your floor. Tell no one.’ Then, appeased by this regained nearness to her, and by the sense that no danger could strike the one without warning the other, he wrapped himself in his soldier’s cloak and fell asleep.

In November he painted his last three water-colours — visions of the East, painted for her, and as flower-bright as possible, ‘because flowers were scarce’ in the doomed city.

[55]

December came. Regnault spent Christmas night at the advanced post of Colombes. His captain wished to make him an officer. ‘Thanks, my captain,’ said the young fellow of twenty-three; ‘but if you have a good soldier in me, why exchange him for an indifferent officer? My example will be of more use to you than my commission.’ Meanwhile the days and nights were passed in Arctic cold. Men were frozen to death round about him; his painter’s hand was frostbitten. ‘Oh! I can speak with authority on cold! ‘he wrote to his *fiancée*; ‘this morning at least I know what it is to spend the night on the hard earth exposed to a glacial wind. Enough! *Je me réchaufferai à votre foyer*. I love you — I love my country — that sustains. Adieu!’

On the 17th, after a few days in Paris spent with her and some old friends, he was again ordered to the front. On Thursday the fight at Buzenval began with a brilliant success; in the middle of the day his *fiancée* still had news of him, brought by a servant. Night fell. The battle was hottest in a wood adjoining the park of Buzenval. Regnault and his painter-comrade Clairin were side by side. Suddenly the retreat was sounded, and the same instant Clairin missed his friend. He sought him with frenzy amid the trees in the darkening wood, called to him, peered into the faces of the dying — no answer! Ah! he must have been swept backwards by the rush of the retreat — Clairin will find him again.

Three days later the lost was found — one among two

[56]

hundred corpses of National Guards carted into Pere Lachaise. Clairin, mad with grief, held his friend in his arms — held, kissed the beautiful head, now bruised and stained past even *her* knowing, with its bullet-wound in the temple.

On his breast was found a medal with a silver tear hanging from it. She who had long worn it as a symbol of bereavement, in memory of dear ones lost to her, had given it to him in her first joy. ‘I will reclaim it,’ she had said, smiling, ‘the first time you make me weep!’ It was all that was brought back to her — all except a scrawled paper found in his pocket, containing some hurried and almost illegible words, written perhaps beside his outpost fire.

‘We have lost many men — we must remake them — *better* — *stronger*. The lesson should profit us. No more lingering amid facile pleasures! Who dare now live for himself alone? It has been for too long the custom with us to believe in nothing but enjoyment and all bad passions. We have prided ourselves on despising everything good and worthy. No more of such contempt!’

Then — so the story ended — four days later, on the very day of the capitulation of Paris, Regnault was carried to his last rest. A figure in widow’s dress

walked behind. And to many standing by, amid the muffled roll of the drums and the wailing of the music, it was as though France herself went down to burial with her son.

[57]

David got up gently and went across to Barbier, who was sitting with his letters and papers before him, staring and stupefied, the lower jaw falling, in a trance of grief.

The young man put down the newspaper he had been reading in front of the old man.

‘Rad that some time; it will give you something to be proud of. I told you I knew him — he was kind to me.’

Barbier nodded, not understanding, and sought for his spectacles with shaking fingers. David quietly went out.

He walked home in a state of exaltation like a man still environed with the emotion of great poetry or great music. He said very little about Regnault in the days that followed to Ancrum or Barbier, even to Dora, with whom every week his friendship was deepening. But the memory of the dead man, as it slowly shaped itself in his brooding mind, became with him a permanent and fruitful element of thought. Very likely the Regnault whom he revered, whose name was hence-forth a sacred thing to him, was only part as it were of the real Regnault. He saw the French artist with an Englishman’s eyes — interpreted him in English ways — the ways, moreover, of a consciousness self-taught and provincial, however gifted and flexible. Only one or two aspects, no doubt, of that rich, self-tormented nature, reared amid the most complex movements of European intelligence, were really plain to him. And those

[58]

aspects were specially brought home to him by his own mental condition. No matter. Broadly, essentially, he understood.

But thenceforward, just as Elise Delaunay had stood to him in the beginning for French art and life, and that ferment in himself which answered to them, so now in her place stood Regnault with those stern words upon his young and dying lips — ‘We have lost many men — we must remake them — *better!* Henceforward let no one dare live unto himself.’ The Englishman took them into his heart, that ethical fibre in him, which was at last roused and dominant, vibrating, responding. And as the poignant images of death and battle faded he saw his hero always as he had seen him last — young, radiant, vigorous, pointing to the dawn behind Notre Dame.

All life looked differently to David this winter. He saw the Manchester streets and those who lived in them with other perceptions. His old political debating interests, indeed, were comparatively slack; but persons — men and women, and their stories — for these he was instinctively on the watch. His eye noticed the faces he passed as it had never yet done — divined in them suffering, or vice, or sickness. All that he saw at this moment he saw tragically. The doors set open about him were still, as Keats, himself hurried to his end by an experience of passion, once expressed it, ‘all dark,’ and leading to darkness. There were times

[59]

when Dora’s faith and Ancrum’s mysticism drew him irresistibly; other times when they were almost as repulsive to him as they had ever been, because they sounded to him like the formula of people setting out to explain the world ‘with a light heart,’ as Ollivier had gone to war.

But whether or no it could be explained, this world, he could not now help putting out his hand to meddle with and mend it; his mind fed on its incidents and conditions. The mill-girls standing on the Ancoats pavements; the drunken lurryman tottering out from the public-house to his lurry under the biting sleet of February; the ragged barefoot boys and girls swarming and festering in the slums; the young men struggling all about him for subsistence and success — these for the first time became

realities to him, entered into that pondering of 'whence and whither' to which he had been always destined, and whereon he was now consciously started.

And as the months went on, his attention was once more painfully caught and held by Dora's troubles and Daddy's infirmities. For Daddy's improvement was short-lived. A bad relapse came in November; things again went downhill fast; the loan contracted in the summer had to be met, and under the pressure of it Daddy only became more helpless and disreputable week by week. And now, when Doctor Mildmay went to see him, Daddy, crouching over the fire, pretended to be deaf, and 'soft' besides. Nothing could be got out of him except certain

[60]

grim hints that his house was his own till he was turned out of it. 'Looks pretty bad this time,' said the doctor to David once as he came out discomfited. 'After all, there's not much hope when the craving returns on a man of his age, especially after some years' interval.'

Daddy would sometimes talk frankly enough to David. At such times his language took an exasperating Shakespearean turn. He was abominably fond of posing as Lear or Jaques — as a man much buffeted, and acquainted with all the ugly secrets of life. Purcell stood generally for 'the enemy; 'and to Purcell his half-mad fancy attributed most of his misfortunes. It was Purcell who had undermined his business, taken away his character, and driven him back to drink. David did not believe much of it, and told him so. Then, roused to wrath, the young man would speak his mind plainly as to Dora's sufferings and Dora's future. But to very little purpose.

'Aye, you're right — you're right enough,' said the old man to him on one of these occasions, with a wild, sinister look. 'Cordelia 'll hang for 't. If you want to do her any good, you must turn old Lear out — send him packing, back to the desert where he was before. There's elbow-room there!'

David looked up startled. The thin bronzed face had a restless flutter in it. Before he could reply Daddy had laid a hand on his shoulder.

‘Davy, why don’t you drink?’

[61]

‘What do you mean?’ said the young man, flushing.

‘Davy, you’ve been as close as wax; but Daddy can see a thing or two when he chooses. Ah, you should drink, my lad. Let people prate — why shouldn’t a man please himself? It’s not the beastly liquor — that’s the worst part of it — it’s the dreams, my lad. “the dreams that come.” They say ether does the business cheapest. A teaspoonful — and you can be alternately in Paradise and the gutter four times a day. But the fools here don’t know how to mix it.’

As he spoke the door opened, and there stood Dora on the threshold. She had just come back from a Lenten service; her little worn prayer-book was in her hand. She stood trembling, looking at them both — at David’s tight, indignant lips — at her father’s excitement.

Daddy’s eye fell on her prayer-book, and David, looking up, saw a quick cloud of distaste, aversion, pass over his weird face.

She put out some supper, and pressed David to stay. He did so in the vain hope of keeping Daddy at home. But the old vagrant was too clever for both of them. When David at last got up to go. Daddy accompanied him downstairs, and stood in the doorway looking up Market Place till David had disappeared in the darkness. Then with a soft and cunning hand he drew the door to behind him, and stood a moment lifting his face to the rack of moonlit cloud scudding across the top of the houses opposite. As he

[62]

did so, he drew a long breath, with the gesture of one to whom the wild airs of that upper sky, the rush of its driving wind, were stimulus and delight. Then he put down his head and stole off to the right, towards the old White Inn in Hanging Ditch, while Dora was still listening in misery for his return step upon the stairs.

A week later Dora, not knowing how the restaurant could be kept going any longer, and foreseeing utter bankruptcy and ruin as soon as the shutters should be up, took her courage in both hands, swallowed all pride, and walked up to Half Street to beg help of Purcell. After all he was her mother's brother. In spite of that long feud between him and Daddy, he would surely, for his own credit's sake, help them to escape a public scandal. For all his rodomontade. Daddy had never done him any real harm that she could remember.

So she opened the shop door in Half Street, quaking at the sound of the bell she set in motion, and went in.

Twenty minutes afterwards she came out again, looking from side to side like a hunted creature, her veil drawn close over her face. She fled on through Market Place, across Market Street and St. Ann's Square, and through the tall dark warehouse streets beyond — drawn blindly towards Potter Street and her only friend.

David was putting out some books on the stall when he looked up and saw her. Perceiving that she

[63]

was weeping and breathless, he asked her into the back room, while John kept guard in the shop.

There she leant against the mantelpiece, shaking from head to foot, and wiping away her tears. He soon gathered that she had been to Purcell, and that Purcell had dismissed her appeal with every circumstance of cold and brutal insult. The sooner her father was in the workhouse or the lunatic asylum, and she in some nunnery or other, the sooner each would be in their right place. He was a vagabond, and she a Papist — let them go where they belonged. He was not going to spend a farthing of his hard-earned money to help either of them to impose any further on the world. And then he let fall a word or two which showed her that he had probably been at the bottom of some merciless pressure lately applied to them by one or two of their chief creditors. The

bookseller's hour was come, and he was looking on at the hewing of his Agag with the joy of the righteous. So might the Lord avenge him of all his enemies.

Dora could hardly give an account of it. The naked revelation of Purcell's hate, of so hard and vindictive a soul, had worked upon her like some physical horror. She had often suspected the truth, but now that it was past doubting, the moral shock was terrible to this tender mystical creature, whose heart by day and night lived a hidden life with the Crucified and with His saints. Oh, how could he, how could anyone, be so cruel? — her father getting an old man!

[64]

and she, who had never quarrelled with him — who had nursed Lucy! So she wailed, gradually recovering her poor shaken soul — calming it, indeed, all the while out of sight, with quick piteous words of prayer and sub-mission.

David stood by, pale with rage and sympathy. But what could he do? He was himself in the midst of a hard struggle, and had neither money nor credit available. They parted at last, with the understanding that he was to go and consult Ancrum, and that she was to go to her friends at St. Damian's.

Till now poor Dora had carefully refrained from bringing her private woes into relation with her life in and through St. Damian's. Within that enchanted circle, she was another being with another existence. There she had never asked anything for herself, except the pardon and help of God, before His altar, and through His priests. Rather she had given — given all that she had — her time, such as she could spare from Daddy and her work, to the Sunday-school and the sick; her hard-won savings on her clothes, and on the extra work, for which she would often sit up night after night when Daddy believed her asleep, to the poor and to the services of the Church. There she had a position, almost an authority of her own — the authority which comes of self-spending. But now this innocent pride must be humbled. For the sake of her father, and of those to whom they owed money they could not pay, she must go and ask — beg instead of giving. All she wanted was time. Her

[65]

embroidery work was now better paid than ever. If the restaurant were closed she could do more of it. In the end she believed she could pay everybody. But she must have time. Yes, she would go to Father Vernon that night! He would understand, even if he could not help her.

Alas! Next morning David was just going out to dinner, when a message was brought him from Market Place. He started off thither at a run, and found a white and gasping Dora wandering restlessly up and down the upper room; while Sarah, the old Lancashire cook, very red and very tearful, followed about trying to administer consolation. Daddy had disappeared. After coming in about eleven the night before and going noisily to his room — no doubt for the purpose of deluding Dora — he must have stolen down again and made off without being either seen or heard by anybody. Even the policeman on duty in Market Place had noticed nothing. He had taken what was practically the only money left them in the world — about twenty pounds — from Dora's cashbox, and some clothes, packing these last in a knapsack which still remained to him from the foreign tramps of years before.

The efforts made by Dora, David, and Ancrum, whom David called in to help, to track the fugitive, were quite useless. Daddy had probably disguised himself, for he had all the tricks of the adventurer, and could 'make up' in former days so as to deceive even his own wife.

Strange outbreak of a secret ineradicable instinct!

[66]

He had been Dora's for twenty years. But life with her at Leicester, and during their first years at Manchester, had thriven too evenly, and in the end the old wanderer had felt his blood prick within him, and the mania of his youth revive. His business had grown hateful to him; it was probably the comparative monotony of success which had

first reawakened the travel-hunger — then restlessness, conflict, leading to drink, and, finally, escape.

‘He will come back, you know,’ said Dora one night, sharply, to David. ‘He served my mother so many times. But he always came back.’

They were sitting together in the shuttered and dismantled restaurant. There was to be a sale on the premises on the morrow, and the lower room had that day been filled with all the ‘plant’ of the restaurant, and all or almost all the poor household stuff from up-stairs. It was an odd, ramshackle collection; and poor Dora, who had been walking round looking at the auction tickets, was realising with a sinking heart how much debt the sale would still leave unprovided for. But she had found friends. Father Vernon had met the creditors for her. There had been a composition, and she had insisted upon working off to the best of her power whatever sum might remain after the possession and goodwill had been sold. She could live on a crust, and she was sure of continuous work both for the great church-furniture shop in Manchester which had hitherto employed her and also for the newly established

[67]

School of Art Needlework at Kensington. As an embroideress there were few more delicately trained eyes and defter hands than hers in England.

When she spoke of her father’s coming back, David was seized with pity. She could not sit down in these days when her work was out of her hands. Perpetual movement seemed her only relief. The face, that seemed so featureless but was so expressive, had lost its sweet, shining look; the mouth had the pucker of pain; and she had piteous startled ways quite unlike her usual soft serenity.

‘Oh, yes, he will come back — some time,’ he said, to comfort her.

‘I don’t doubt that — never. But I wonder how he could go like that — how he had the heart! I did think he cared for me. I wasn’t ever nasty to him — at least, I don’t remember. Perhaps he thought I was. But only we two — and always together — since mother died!’

She began to tidy some of the lots, to tie some of the bundles of odds and ends together more securely — talking all the while in a broken way. She was evidently bewildered and at sea. If she could have remembered any misconduct of her own, it seemed to David, it would have been a relief to her. Her faith taught her that love was all-powerful — but it had availed her nothing!

The sale came; and the goodwill of the Parlour was sold to a man who was to make a solid success of what with Daddy had been a half-crazy experiment.

[68]

Dora went to live in Ancoats, that teeming, squalid quarter which lies but a stone's-throw from the principal thoroughfares and buildings of Manchester, and in its varieties of manufacturing life and population presents types which are all its own. Here are the cotton operatives who work the small proportion of mills still remaining within the bounds of Manchester — the spinners, minders, reelers, reed-makers, and the rest; here are the calico-printers and dyers, the warehousemen and lurrymen; and here too are the sellers of 'fents,' and all the other thousand and one small trades and occupations which live on and by the poor. The quarter has one broad thoroughfare or lung, which on a sunny day is gay, sightly, and alive; then to north and south diverge the innumerable low red-brick streets where the poor live and work; which have none, however, of the trim uniformity which belongs to the workers' quarters of the factory towns pure and simple. Manchester in its worst streets is more squalid, more haphazard, more nakedly poor even than London. Yet, for all that, Manchester is a city with a common life, which London is not. The native Lancashire element, lost as it is beneath many supervening strata, is still there and powerful; and there are strong well-defined characteristic interests and occupations which bind the whole together.

Here Dora settled with a St. Damian's girl friend, a shirtmaker. They lived over a sweetshop, in two tiny rooms, in a street even more miscellaneous and half-baked

[69]

than its neighbours. Outside was ugliness; inside, unremitting labour. But Dora soon made herself almost happy. By various tender shifts she had saved out of the wreck in Market Place Daddy's bits of engravings and foreign curiosities, his Swiss carvings and shells, his skins and stuffed birds: very moth-eaten and melancholy these last, but still safe. There, too, was his chair; it stood beside the fire; he had but to come back to it. Many a time in the week did she suddenly rise that she might go to the door and listen; or crane her head out of window, agitated by a figure, a sound, as her mother had done before her.

Then her religious life was free to expand as it had never been yet. Very soon, in Passion Week, she and her friend had gathered a prayer-meeting of girls, hands from the mill at the end of the street. They came for twenty minutes in the dinner-hour, delicate-faced comely creatures many of them, with their shawls over their heads: Dora prayed and sang with them, a soft tremulous passion in every word and gesture. They thought her a saint — began to tell her their woes and their sins. In the evenings and on Sunday she lived in the coloured and scented church, with its plaintive music, its luminous altar, its suggestions both of a great encompassing church order of undefined antiquity and infinite future, and of a practical system full of support for individual weakness and guidance for the individual will. The beauty of the ceremonial appealed to those instincts in her which found other

[70]

expression in her glowing embroideries; and towards the church order, with its symbols, observances, mysteries, the now solitary girl felt a more passionate adoration, a more profound humility, than ever before. Nothing too much could be asked of her. During Lent, but for the counsels of Father Russell himself, a shrewd man, well aware that St. Damian's represented the one Anglican oasis in an incorrigibly moderate Manchester,

even her serviceable and elastic strength would have given way, so hard she was to that poor 'sister the body,' which so many patient ages have gone to perfect and adjust.

Half of the romance, the poetry of her life, lay here; the other half in her constant expectation of her father, and in the visits of David Grieve. Once a week at least David mounted to the little room where the two girls sat working; sometimes now, oh joy! he went to church with her; sometimes he made her come out to Eccles, or Cheadle, or the Irwell valley for a walk. She used various maidenly arts and self-restraints to prevent scandal. At home she never saw him alone, and she now never went to Potter Street. Still, out of doors they were often alone. There was no concealment, and the persons who look notice assumed that they were keeping company and going to be married. When such things were said to Dora she met them with a sweet and quiet denial, at first blushing, then with no change at all of look or manner.

Yet the girl who lived with her knew that the first

[71]

sound of David's rap on the door below sent a tremor through the figure beside her, that the slight hand would go up instinctively to the coiled hair, straightening and pinning, and that the smiling, listening, sometimes disputing Dora who talked with David Grieve was quite different from the dreamy and ascetic Dora who sat beside her all day.

Why did David go? As a matter of fact, with every month of this winter and spring, Dora's friendship became more necessary to him. All the brotherly feeling he would once so willingly have spent on Louie, he now spent on Dora. She became in truth a sister to him. He talked to her as he would have done to Louie had she been like Dora. No other relationship ever entered his mind; and he believed that he was perfectly understood and met in the same way.

Both often spoke of Lucy, towards whom David in this new and graver temper felt both kindly and gratefully. She, poor child, wrote to Dora from time to time letters full of complaints of her father and of his tyranny in keeping her away from Manchester. He indeed seemed to have taken a morbid dislike to his daughter, and what

company he wanted he got from the widow, whom yet he had never made up his mind to marry. Lucy chafed and rebelled against the perpetual obstacles he placed in the way of her returning home, but he threatened to make her earn her own living if she disobeyed him, and in the end she always submitted. She poured herself out bitterly, however, to Dora, and

[72]

Dora was helplessly sorry for her, feeling that her idle wandering life with the various aunts and cousins she boarded with was excessively bad for her — seeing that Lucy was not of the stuff to fashion new duties or charities for herself out of new relations — and that the small, vain, and yet affectionate nature ran an evil chance of ultimate barrenness and sourness.

But what could she do? In every letter there was some mention of David Grieve or request for news about him. About the visit to Paris Dora had written discreetly, telling only what she knew, and nothing of what she guessed. In reality, as the winter passed on, Dora watched him more and more closely, waiting for the time when that French mystery, whatever it was, should have ceased to overshadow him, and she might once more scheme for Lucy. He must marry — that she knew! — whatever he might think. Anyone could see that, with the returning spring, in spite of her friendship and Ancrum's, he felt his loneliness almost intolerable. It was clear, too, as his manhood advanced, that he was naturally drawn to women, naturally dependent on them. In spite of his great intelligence, to her so formidable and mysterious, Dora had soon recognised, as Elise had done, the eager, clinging, confiding temper of his youth. And beneath the transformation of passion and grief it was still there — to be felt moving often like a wounded thing.

[73]

IT was a showery April evening. But as it was also a Saturday, Manchester took no heed at all of the weather. The streets were thronged. All the markets were ablaze with light, and full of buyers. In Market Place, Dora's old home, the covered glass booths beside the pavement brought the magic of the spring into the very heart of the black and swarming town, for they were a fragrant show of daffodils, hyacinths, primroses, and palms. Their lights shone out into the rainy mist of the air, on the glistening pavements, and on the faces of the cheerful chattering crowd, to which the shawled heads so common among the women gave the characteristic Lancashire touch. Above rose the dark tower of the Exchange; on one side was the Parlour, still dedicated to the kindly diet of corn and fruit-eating men, but repainted, and launched on a fresh career of success by Daddy's successor; on the other, the gabled and bulging mass of the old Fishing-tackle House, with a lively fish and oyster traffic surging in the little alleys on either side of it.

Market Street, too, was thronged. In the great cheap shop at the head of it, aflame with lights from top to

[74]

base, you could see the buyers story after story, swarming like bees in a glass hive. Farther on in the wide space of the Infirmary square, the omnibuses gathered, and a detachment of redcoats just returned from rifle-practice on the moors crowded the pavement outside the hospital, amid an admiring escort of the youth of Manchester, while their band played lustily.

But especially in Peter Street, the street of the great public halls and principal theatres, was Manchester alive and busy. Nilsson was singing at the 'Royal,' and the rich folk were setting down there in their broughams and landaus. But in the great Free Trade Hall there was a performance of 'Judas Maccabeus' given by the Manchester Philharmonic Society, and the vast place, filled from end to end with shilling and two-shilling seats, was crowded with the 'people.' It was a purely local scene, unlike anything of the same kind in London, or any other capital. The performers on the

platform were well known to Manchester, unknown elsewhere; Manchester took them at

once critically and affectionately, remembering their past, looking forward to their future; the Society was one of which the town was proud; the conductor was a character, and popular; and half the audience at least was composed of the relations and friends of the chorus. Most people had a 'Susan,' an 'Alice,' or a 'William' making signs to them at intervals from the orchestra; and when anything went particularly well.

[75]

and the applause was loud, the friends of Susan or Alice beamed with a proprietary pride.

Looking down upon this friendly cheerful throng sat David Grieve, high up in the balcony. It had been his wont of late to frequent these cheap concerts, where as a rule, owing to the greater musical sensitiveness of the English North as compared with the South, the music is singularly good. During the past winter, indeed, music might almost be said to have become part of his life. He had no true musical gift, but in the paralysis of many of his natural modes of expression which had overtaken him music supplied a need. In it he at least, and at this moment, found a voice and an emotion not too personal or poignant. He lost himself in it, and was soothed.

Towards the beginning of the last part he suddenly with a start recognised Lucy Purcell in the body of the hall. She was sitting with friends whom he did not know, staring straight before her. He bent forward and looked at her carefully. In a minute or two he decided that she was looking tired, cross, and unhappy, and that she was not attending to the music at all.

So at last her father had let her come home. As her looks, to be daughter to Purcell was to be sure of disagreeable living; and perhaps her future stepmother had been helping Purcell to annoy her.

Poor little thing! David felt a strong wish to speak to her after the performance. Meanwhile he tried to attract her attention, but in vain. It seemed to him

[76]

that she looked right along the bench on which he sat; but there was no flash in her face; it remained as tired and frowning as before.

He ran downstairs before the end of the last chorus, and placed himself near the door by which he felt sure she would come out. He was just in time. She and her party also came out early before the rush. There was a sudden crowd of people in the doorway, and then he heard a little cry. Lucy stood before him, flushed, pulling at her glove, and saying something incoherent. But before he could understand she had turned back to the two women who accompanied her and spoken to them quickly; the elder replied, with a sour look at David; the younger laughed behind her muff. Lucy turned away wilfully, and at that instant the crowd from within, surging outwards, swept them away from her, and she and David found themselves together.

‘Come down those steps there, to the right,’ she said peremptorily. ‘They are going the other way.’

By this time David himself was red. She hurried him into the street, however, and then he saw that she was breathing hard, and that her hands were clasped together as though she were trying to restrain herself.

‘Oh, I am so unhappy!’ she burst out, ‘so unhappy! And it was all, you know, to begin with, because of you, Mr. Grieve! But oh! I forgot you’d been ill — you look so different!’

She paused suddenly, while over her face there

[77]

passed an expression half startled, half shrinking, as of one who speaks familiarly, as he supposes, to an old friend and finds a stranger. She could not take her eyes off him. What was this new dignity, this indefinable change of manner?

‘I am not different,’ he said hastily, ‘not in the least. So your father has never forgiven you the kindness you did me? I don’t know what to say. Miss Lucy. I’m both sorry and ashamed.’

‘Forgiven it! — no, nor ever will,’ she said shortly, walking on, and forgetting everything but her woes. ‘Oh, do listen! Come up Oxford Street. I must tell some one, or I shall die! I must see Dora. Father’s forbidden me to go, and I haven’t had a moment to myself yet. She hasn’t written to me since she left the Parlour, and no one ‘ll tell me where she is. And that odious woman! Oh, she is an abominable wretch! She wants to claim all my things — all the bits of things that were mother’s, and I have always counted mine. She won’t let me take any of them away. And she’s stolen a necklace of mine — yes, Mr. Grieve, stolen it. I don’t care that about it — not in itself; but to have your things taken out of your drawers without “*With your leave*” or “*By your leave*”! — She’s made father worse than ever. I thought he had found her out, but he is actually going to marry her in July, and they won’t let me live at home unless I make a solemn promise to “perform my religious duties” and behave properly to the chapel people. And

[78]

I never will, not if I starve for it — nasty, canting, crawling, backbiting things! Then father says I can live away, and he’ll make me an allowance. And what do you think he’ll allow me?’

She faced round upon him with curving lip and eyes aflame. David averred truly that he could not guess.

‘Thirty — pounds — a — year!’ she said with vicious emphasis. ‘There — would you believe it? If you put a dirty little chit of a nurse-girl on board wages, it would come to more than that. And he just bought three houses in Millgate, and as rich as anything! Oh, it’s shameful, I call it, *shameful!*’

She put her handkerchief to her eyes. Then she quickly withdrew it again and turned to him, remembering how his first aspect had surprised her. In the glare of some

shops they were passing David could see her perfectly, and she him. Certainly, in the year which had elapsed since they had met she had ripened, or rather softened, into a prettier girl. Whether it was the milder Southern climate in which she had been living, or the result of physical weakness left by her, attack of illness in the preceding spring, at any rate her bloom was more delicate, the lines of her small, pronounced face more finished and melting. As for her, now that she had paused a moment in her flow of complaint, she was busy puzzling out the change in him. David became vaguely conscious of it, and tried to set her off again.

[79]

‘But you’d rather live away,’ he said, ‘when they treat you like that? You’d rather be independent, I should think? I would!’

‘Oh, catch me living with that woman!’ she cried passionately. ‘She’s no better than a thief, a common thief. I don’t care who hears me. And *made up*! Oh, it’s shocking! It seems to me there’s nothing I can talk about at home now — whether it’s getting old — or teeth — or hair — I’m always supposed to be “passing remarks.” And I wouldn’t mind if it was my Hastings cousins I had to live with. But they can’t have me any more, and now I’m at Wakely with the Astons.’

‘The Astons?’ David echoed. Like most people of small training and intelligence, Lucy instinctively supposed that whatever was familiar to her was familiar to other people.

‘Oh, don’t you know? It’s father’s sister who married a mill-overseer at Wakely. And they’re very kind to me. Only they’re *dreadfully* pious too — not like father — I don’t mean that. And, you see — it’s Robert!’

‘Who’s Robert?’ asked David, amused by her blush, and admiring the trim lightness of her figure and walk.

‘Robert ‘s the eldest son. He ‘s a reedmaker. He ‘s got enough to marry on — at least he thinks so.’

‘And he wants to marry you?’

She nodded. Then she looked at him, laughing,

[80]

her naturally bright eyes sparkling through the tears still wet in them.

‘Father ‘s a Baptist, you know — that ‘s bad enough — but Robert ‘s a Particular Baptist. I asked him what it meant once when he was pestering me to marry him. “Well, you see,” he said, “a man must show that his heart ‘s changed — we don’t take in everybody like — we want to be sure they’re real converted.” I don’t believe it does mean that — father says it doesn’t. Anyway I asked him whether if I married him he ‘d want me to be a Particular Baptist too. And he said, very slow and solemn, that of course he should look for religious fellowship in his wife, but that he didn’t want to hurry me. I laughed till I cried at the thought of me going to that hideous chapel of his, dressed like his married sister. But sometimes, I declare, I think he’ll make me do what he wants — he ‘s got a way with him. He sticks to a thing as tight as wax, and I don’t care what becomes of me sometimes.’

She pouted despondently, but her quick eye stole to her companion’s face.

‘Oh, no, you won’t marry Robert, Miss Lucy,’ said David cheerfully. ‘You’ve had a will of your own ever since I’ve known you. But what are you at home for now?’

‘Why, I told you — to pack up my things. But I can’t find half of them; she — she ‘s walked off with them. Oh, I’m going off again as soon as possible — I can’t stand it. But I must see Dora. Father says I

[81]

shan’t visit Papists. But I’ll watch my chance. I’ll get there to-morrow — see if I don’t! Tell me what she’s doing, Mr. Grieve.’

David told her all he knew. Lucy’s comments were very characteristic. She was equally hard on Daddy’s ill-behaviour and Dora’s religion, with a little self-

satisfied hardness that would have provoked David but for its childish *naiveté*. Many of the things that she said of Dora, however, showed real feeling, real affection.

‘She is good,’ she wound up at last with a long sigh.

‘Yes, she’s the best woman I ever saw,’ said David slowly; ‘she’s beautiful, she’s a saint.’

Lucy looked up quickly — her dismayed eyes fastened on him — then they fell again, and her expression became suddenly piteous and humble.

‘You ‘re still getting on well, aren’t you?’ she said timidly. ‘You were glad not to be turned out, weren’t you?’

Somehow, for the life of her, she could not at that moment help reminding him of her claim upon him. He admitted it very readily, told her broadly how he was doing and what new connections he was making. It was pleasant to tell her, pleasant to speak to this changing rose-leaf face with its eager curiosity and attention.

‘And you were ill when you were abroad? — so Dora said. Father, of course, made unkind remarks — you may be sure of that! — *he*’ll set stories about when he doesn’t like anybody. I didn’t believe a word.’

[82]

‘It don’t matter,’ said David hotly, but he flushed. His desire to wring Purcell’s neck was getting inconveniently strong.

‘No, not a bit,’ she declared. Then she suddenly broke into laughter. ‘Oh, Mr. Grieve, how many assistants do you think father ‘s had since you left?’

And she chattered on about these individuals, describing a series of dolts, their achievements and personalities, with a great deal of girlish fun. Her companion enjoyed her little humours and egotisms, enjoyed the walk and her companionship. After the strain of the day, a day spent either in the toil of a developing business or under a difficult pressure of thought, this light girl’s voice brought a gay, relaxed note into life. The spring was in the air, and his youth stirred again in that cavern where grief had buried it.

‘Oh dear, I must go home,’ she said at last regret-fully, startled by a striking clock. ‘Father ’ll be just mad. Of course, he ’ll hear all about my meeting you — I don’t care. I’m not going to be parted from all my friends to please him, particularly now he ’s turned me out for good — from Dora and ——’

‘From you’ she would have said, but she became suddenly conscious and her voice failed.

‘No, indeed! And your friends won’t forget you, Miss Lucy. You’ll go and see Dora to-morrow?’

‘Yes, if I can give them the slip at home.’

There was a pause, and then he said —

[83]

‘And will you allow me to visit you at Wakely some Sunday? I know those moors well.’

She reddened all over with delight. There was something in the little stiffness of the request which gave it importance.

‘I wish you would; it ’s not far,’ she stammered. ‘Aunt Miriam would be glad to see you.’

They walked back rapidly along Mosley Street and into Market Place. There she stopped and shyly asked him to leave her. Almost all the Saturday-night crowd had disappeared from the streets. It was really late, and she became suddenly conscious that this walk of hers might reasonably be regarded at home as a somewhat bold proceeding.

‘I wish you ’d let me see you right home,’ he said, detaining her hand in his.

‘Oh, no, no — I shall catch it enough as it is. Oh, they’ll let me in! Will it be next Sunday, Mr. Grieve?’

‘No, the Sunday after. Can I do anything for you?’

He came closer to her, seeming to envelope her in his tall, protecting presence. It was impossible for him to ignore her girlish flutter, her evident joy in having seen and

talked to him again, in spite of her dread of her father. Nor did he wish to ignore them. They were unexpectedly sweet to him, and he surprised himself.

‘Oh no, nothing, — but it ‘s very good of you to say so,’ she said impulsively; ‘*very*. Good night again.’

[84]

And instinctively she put out another small hand, which also he took, so holding her prisoner a moment.

‘Look here,’ he said, ‘I’ll just slip down that side of the Close and wait till I see you get safe in. Good night; I am glad I saw you!’

She ran away in a blind whirl of happiness up the steps into the passage of Half Street. He slipped down to the left and waited, looking through the railings across the corner of the Close, his eyes fixed on that upper window, where he had so often sat, parleying alternately with the cathedral and Voltaire.

Lucy rang, the door opened, there were loud sounds within, but she was admitted; it closed behind her.

David was soon in his back room, kindling a lamp and a bit of fire to read by. But when it was done he sat bent forward over the blaze, till the cathedral clock chimed the small hours, thinking.

She was so unformed and childish, that poor little thing! — surely a man could make what he would of her. She would give him affection and duty; the core of the nature was sound, and her little humours would bring life into a house.

He had but to put out his hand — that was plain enough. And why not? Was any humbler draught to be for ever put aside, because the best wine had been poured to waste?

Then the rebellions of an unquenched romance, an untamed heart, beset him. Surging waves of bitterness and pain, the after-swell of that tempest in which his

[85]

youth had so nearly foundered, seemed to bear him away to seas of desolation.

After all that had happened, the greed for personal joy he every now and then detected in himself surprised and angered him by its strength. The truth was that in whole tracts of his nature he was still a boy, still young beyond his years, and it was the conflict in him between youth's hot immaturity and a man's baffling experience which made the pain of his life.

He meant to go to Wakely on the next Sunday but one — that he was certain of — but as to what he was to do and say when he got there he was perhaps culpably uncertain. But in his weakness and *sehnsucht* he dwelt upon the thought of Lucy more and more.

Then Dora — foolish saint! — came upon the scene.

Lucy found her way to the street in Ancoats where Dora lived, the morning after her talk with David, and the two cousins spent an agitated hour together. Lucy could hardly find time to ask Dora about her sorrows, so occupied was she in recounting all her own adventures. She was to go back to Wakely that very afternoon. Purcell had been absolutely unapproachable since the cousin who had escorted Lucy to the Free Trade Hall the night before had in her own defence revealed the secret of that young lady's behaviour. Pack and go she should! He wouldn't have such a hussy another night under his roof. Let them do with her as could.

[86]

‘I thought he would have beaten me this morning,’ Lucy candidly confessed. There was a red spot on each cheek, and she was evidently glorying in martyrdom. ‘He looked like a devil — a real devil. Why can't he be fond of me, and let me alone, like other girls' fathers? I believe he is fond of me somehow, but he wants to break my spirit——’

She tossed her head significantly.

‘Lucy, you know you ought to give in when you can,’ said the perplexed Dora, with rebuke in her voice.

‘Oh, nonsense!’ said Lucy. ‘You can’t — it’s ridiculous. Well, he’ll quarrel with that woman some day — I’m sure *she’s* his match — and then maybe he’ll want me back. But perhaps he won’t get me.’

Dora looked up with a curious expression, half smiling, half wistful. She had already heard all the story of the walk.

‘Dora!’ cried the child, laying down her head on the table beneath her cousin’s eyes, ‘Dora, I do believe he’s beginning to care. You see he *asked* to come to Wakely. I didn’t ask him. Oh, if it all comes to nothing again, I shall break my heart!’

Dora smoothed the fine brown hair, and said affectionate things, but vaguely, as if she was not quite certain what to say.

‘He does look quite different, somehow,’ continued Lucy. ‘Why do you think he was so long away over there, Dora? Father says nasty things about it — says he fell into bad company and lost his money.’

[87]

‘I don’t know how Uncle Purcell can know,’ said Dora indignantly. ‘He’s always thinking the worst of people. He was ill, for Mr. Ancrum told me, and he’s the only person that *does* know. And anyone can see he isn’t strong yet.’

‘Oh, and he is so handsome!’ sighed Lucy, ‘handsomer than ever. There isn’t a man in Manchester to touch him.’

Dora laughed out and called her a ‘little silly.’ But, as privately in her heart of hearts she was of the same opinion, her reproof had not much force.

When Lucy left, Dora put away her work, and, lifting a flushed face, walked to the window and stood there looking out. A pale April sun was shining on the brewery opposite, and touched the dark waters of the canal under the bridge to the left. The roofs of the squalid houses abutting on the brewery were wet with rain. Through a gap she could see a laundress’s back-yard mainly filled with drying clothes, but boasting besides

a couple of pink flowering currants just out, and holding their own for a few brief days against the smuts of Manchester. Here and there a man out of work lounged, pipe in mouth, at his open door, silently absorbing the sunshine and the cheerfulness of the moist blue over the house-tops. There was a new sweetness and tenderness in the spring air — or were they in Dora's soul?

She leant her head against the window, and remained

[88]

there with her hands clasped before her for some little time — for her, a most unusual idleness.

Yes, Lucy was very obstinate. Dora had never thought she would have the courage to fight her father in this way. And selfish, too. She had spoken only once of Daddy, and that in a way to make the daughter wince. But she was so young — such a child! — and would be ruined if she were left to this casual life, and people who didn't understand her. A husband to take care of her, and children — they would be the making of her.

And he! Dora's eyes filled with tears. All this winter the change in him, the silent evidences of a shock all the more tragic to her because of its mystery, had given him a kind of sacredness in her eyes. She fell thinking, besides, of the times lately he had been to church with her. Ah, she *was* glad he had heard that sermon, that beautiful sermon of Canon Welby's in Passion Week! He had said nothing about it, but she knew it had been meant for clever, educated men — men like him. The church, indeed, had been full of men — her neighbours had told her that several of the gentlemen from Owens College had been there.

That evening David knocked at the door below about half-past eight. Dora got up quickly and went across to her room-fellow, a dark- faced stooping girl, who took her shirt-maker's slavery without a murmur, and loved Dora. 'Would you mind, Mary?' she said timidly. 'I want to speak to Mr. Grieve.'

[89]

The girl looked up, understood, stopped her machine, and, hastily gathering some pieces together that wanted buttonholes, went off into the little inner room and shut the door.

Dora knelt and with restless hands put the bit of fire together. She had just thrown a handkerchief over her canaries. On the frame a piece of her work, a fine altar-cloth gleaming with golds, purples, and pale pinks, stood uncovered. The deal table, the white walls on which hung Daddy's old prints, the bare floor with its strip of carpet, were all spotlessly clean. The tea had been put away. Daddy's vacant chair stood in its place.

When David came in he found her sitting pensively on a little wooden stool by the fire. Generally he gossiped while the two girls worked busily away — sometimes he read to them. To-night as he sat down he felt something impending.

Dora talked of Lucy's visit. They agreed as to the folly and brutality of Purcell's treatment of her, and laughed together over the marauding stepmother.

Then there was a pause. Dora broke it. She was sitting upright on the stool, looking straight into his face.

'Will you not be cross if I say something?' she asked, catching her breath. 'It's not my business.'

'Say it, please.' But he reddened instantly.

'Lucy's — Lucy's — got a fancy for you,' she said tremulously, shrinking from her own words. 'Perhaps

[90]

it's a shame to say it — oh, it may be ! You haven't told me anything, and she's given me no leave. But she's had it a long time.'

'I don't know why you say so,' he replied half sombrely.

His flush had died away, but his hand shook on his knee.

‘Oh, yes, you do,’ she cried; ‘you must know. Lucy can’t keep even her own secrets. But she’s got such a warm heart! I’m sure she has. If a man would take her and be kind to her, she’d make him happy.’

She stopped, looking at him intently. Then suddenly she burst out, laying her hand on the arm of his chair — Daddy’s chair:

‘Don’t be angry; you’ve been like a brother to me.’

He took her hand and pressed it, reassuring her. ‘But how can I make her happy?’ he said, with his head on his hand. ‘I don’t want to be a fool and deny what you say, for the sake of denying it. But ——’

His voice sank into silence. Then, as she did not speak, he looked up at her. She was sitting, since he had released her, with her arms locked behind her, frowning in her intensity of thought, her last energy of sacrifice.

‘You would make her happy,’ she said slowly, ‘and she’d be a loving wife. She’s flighty is Lucy, but there’s nothing bad in her.’

[91]

Both were silent for another minute, then, by a natural reaction, both looked at each other and laughed.

‘I’m making rather free with you, I’m bound to admit that,’ she said, with a merry shamefaced expression, which brought out the youth in her face.

‘Well, give me time, Miss Dora. If — if anything did come of it, I should have to let Purcell know, and there’d be flat war. You’ve thought of that?’

Certainly, Dora had thought of it. They might have to wait, and Purcell would probably refuse to give or leave Lucy any money. All the better, according to David. Nothing would ever induce him to take a farthing of his ex-master’s hoards.

But here, by a common instinct, they stopped planning, and David resolutely turned the conversation. When they parted, however, Dora was secretly eager and hopeful. It was curious how little the father’s rights weighed with so scrupulous a soul. Whether it was his behaviour to her father which had roused an unconscious hardness

even in her gentle nature, or whether it was the subtle influence of his Dissent, as compared with the nascent dispositions she seemed to see in David — anyway, Dora's conscience was silent; she was entirely absorbed in her own act, and in the prospects of the other two.

[92]

CHAPTER XVI

WHEN David reached home that night he found a French letter awaiting him. It was from Louie, still dated from the country town near Toulouse, and announced the birth of her child — a daughter. The letter was scrawled apparently from her bed, and contained some passionate, abusive remarks about her husband, half finished, and hardly intelligible. She peremptorily called on David to send her some money at once. Her husband was a sot, and unfaithful to her. Even now with his first child, he had taken advantage of her being laid up to make love to other women. All the town cried shame on him. The priest visited her frequently, and was all on her side.

Then at the end she wrote a hasty description of the child. Its eyes were like his, David's, but it would have much handsomer eyelashes. It was by far the best-looking child in the place, and because everybody remarked on its likeness to her, she believed Montjoie had taken a dislike to it. She didn't care, but it made him look ridiculous. Why didn't he do some work, instead of letting her and her child live like pigs? He could get some, if his dirty pride would let him. It

[93]

wasn't to be supposed, with this disgusting Commune going on in Paris, and everybody nearly ruined, that anyone would want statues — they had never even sold the Maenad — but somebody had wanted him to do a monument, cheap, the other day for a brother who had been killed in the war; and he wouldn't. He was too fine. That was like him all over.

It was as though he could hear her flinging out the reckless sentences. But he thought there were signs that she was pleased with the baby — and he suddenly remembered her tyrannous passion for the Mason child.

As to the money, he looked carefully into his accounts. For the last six months he had been gathering every possible saving together with a view to the History of Manchester, which he and John had planned to begin printing in the coming autumn. It went against him sorely to take from such a hoard for the purpose of helping Jules Montjoie to an idler and easier existence. The fate of his six hundred pounds burnt deep into a mind which at bottom was well furnished with all the old Yorkshire and Scotch frugality.

However, he sent his sister money, and he gave up in thought that fortnight's walking tour in the Lakes he had planned for his holiday. He must just stay at home and see to business.

Then next morning, as it happened, he woke up with a sudden hunger for the country — a vision before his eyes of the wide bosom of the Scout, of fresh airs

[94]

and hurrying waters, of the sheep among the heather. His night had been restless; the whole of life seemed to be again in debate — Lucy's figure, Dora's talk, chased and tormented him. Away to the April moorland! He sprang out of bed determined to take the first train to Clough End. He had not been out of Manchester for months, and it was luckily a Saturday. Here was this letter of Louie's too — he owed the news to Uncle Reuben. Since Reuben's visit to Manchester, a year before, there had been no communication between him and them. Six years! How would the farm — how would Aunt Hannah look? There was a drawing in him this morning towards the past, towards even the harsh forms and memories of it, such as often marks a time of emotion and crisis, the moment before a man takes a half-reluctant step towards a doubtful future.

But as he journeyed towards the Derbyshire border, he was not in truth thinking of Dora's counsels or of Lucy Purcell at all. Every now and then he lost

himself in the mere intoxication of the spring, in the charm of the factory valleys, just flushing into green, through which the train was speeding. But in general his attention was held by the book in his hand. His time for reading had been much curtailed of late by the toils of his business. He caught covetously at every spare hour. The book was Bishop Berkeley's 'Dialogues.' With what a medley of thoughts and interests had he been concerned during the last four or five months! His old tastes and passions had revived as we have seen,

[95]

but unequally, with morbid gaps and exceptions. In these days he had hardly opened a poet or a novelist. His whole being shrank from them, as though it had been one wound, and the books which had been to him the passionate friends of his most golden hours, which had moulded in him, as it were, the soul wherewith he had loved Elise, looked to him now like enemies as he passed them quickly by upon the shelves.

But some of his old studies — German, Greek, science especially — were the saving of him. Among some foreign books, for instance, which he had ordered for a customer he came upon a copy of some scientific essays by Littré. Among them was a survey of the state of astronomical knowledge written somewhere about 1835, with all the luminous charm which the great Positivist had at command. David was captured by it, by the flight of the scientific imagination through time and space, amid suns, planets and nebula, the beginnings and the wrecks of worlds. When he laid it down with a sigh of pleasure, Ancrum, who was sitting opposite, looked up.

'You like your book, Davy?'

'Yes,' said the other slowly, staring out of the twilight window at the gloom which passes for sky in Manchester. Then with another long breath, — 'It makes you a new heaven and a new earth!'

A similar impression, only even richer and more detailed, had been left upon him by a volume of Huxley's 'Lay Sermons.' The world of natural fact in its overpowering wealth and mystery was thus given back to

[96]

him, as it were, under another aspect than that torturing intoxicating aspect of art — one that fortified and calmed. All his scientific curiosities which had been so long laid to sleep revived. His first returning joy came from a sense of the inexhaustibleness and infinity of nature.

But very soon this renewed interest in science began to have the bearing and to issue in the mental activities which, all unknown to himself, had been from the beginning in his destiny. He could not now read it for itself alone. That new ethical and spiritual susceptibility, into which agony and loss had become slowly transformed, dominated and absorbed all else. For some time, beside his scientific books, there lay others from a class not hitherto very congenial to him, that which contains the great examples in our day, outside the poets, of the poetical or imaginative treatment of ethics — Emerson, Carlyle, Ruskin. At an age when most young minds of intelligence amongst us are first seized by these English masters, he had been wandering in French paths. ‘Sartor Resartus,’ Emerson’s ‘Essays,’ ‘The Seven Lamps,’ came to him now with an indescribable freshness and force. Nay, a too great force! We enjoy the great prophets of literature most when we have not yet lived enough to realise all they tell us. When David, wandering at night with Teufelsdröckh through heaven and hell, felt at last the hard sobs rising in his throat, he suddenly put the book and others akin to it away from him. As with the poets so here. He must turn to something less eloquent — to paths of

[97]

thought where truth shone with a drier and a calmer light.

But still the same problems! Since his Eden gates had closed upon him, he had been in the outer desert where man has wandered from the beginning, threatened with all the familiar phantoms, illusions, mist-voices of human thought. What was

consciousness — knowledge — law? Was there any law — any knowledge — any *I*? Naturally he had long ceased to find any final sustenance or pleasure in the Secularist literature, which had once convinced him so easily. Secularism up to a certain point, it began to seem to him, was a common place; beyond that point, a contradiction. If the race should ever take the counsel of the Secularists, or of that larger Positivist thought, of which English secularism is the popular reflection, the human intellect would be a poorer instrument with a narrower swing. So much was plain to him. For nothing can be more certain than that some of the finest powers and noblest work of the human mind have been developed by the struggle to know what the Secularist declares is neither knowable nor worth knowing.

Yet the histories of philosophy which he began to turn over were in truth no more fruitful to him than the talk of the *Reasoner*. They stimulated his powers of apprehension and analysis; and the great march of human debate from century to century touched his imagination. But in these summaries of the philosophical field his inmost life appropriated nothing. Once by a

[98]

sort of reaction he fell upon Hume again, pining for the old intellectual clearness of impression, though it were a clearness of limit and negation. But he had hardly begun the 'Treatise' or the 'Essays' before his soul rose against them, crying for he knew not what, only that it was for nothing they could give.

Then by chance a little Life of Berkeley, and upon it an old edition of the works, fell into his hands. As he was turning over the leaves, the 'Alciphron' so struck him that he turned to the first page of the first volume, and evening after evening read the whole through with a devouring energy that never flagged. When it was over he was a different being. The mind had crystallised afresh.

It was his first serious grapple with the fundamental problems of knowledge. And, to a nature which had been so tossed and bruised in the great unregarding tide of things, which had felt itself the mere chattel of a callous universe, of no account or

dignity either to gods or men, what strange exaltation there was in the general *suggestion* of Berkeley's thought! The mind, the source of all that is; the impressions on the senses, merely the speech of the Eternal Mind to ours, a Visual Language, whereof man's understanding is perpetually advancing, which has been indeed contrived for his education; man, naturally immortal, king of himself and of the senses, inalienably one — if he would but open his eyes and see — with all that is Divine, true, eternal: the soul that had been crushed by grief and self-contempt revived at the

[99]

mere touch of these vast possibilities like a trampled plant. Not that it absorbed them yet, made them its own; but they made a healing stimulating atmosphere in which it seemed once more possible for it to grow into a true manhood. The spiritual hypothesis of things was for the first time presented in such a way as to take imaginative hold without exciting or harrowing the feelings; he saw the world reversed, in a pure light of thought, as Berkeley saw it, and all the horizon of things fell back.

Now — on this April afternoon — as the neighbourhood of Manchester was left behind, as the long wood-clad valleys and unpolluted streams began to prophesy of Derbyshire and the Peak, David, his face pressed against the window, fell into a dream with Berkeley and with nature. Oh for knowledge! for verification! He began dimly and passionately to see before him a life devoted to thought — a life in which science after science should become the docile instrument of a mind still pressing on and on into the shadowy realm, till, in Berkeley's language, the darkness part, and it 'recover the lost region of light'!

But in the very midst of this overwhelming vision he said suddenly to himself:

'There is another way — another answer — Dora's way and Ancrum's.'

Aye, the way of faith, which asks for no length of years in which to win the goal, which is there at once — in the beat of a wing — safe on the breast

[100]

of God! He thought of it as he had seen it illustrated in his friend and in Dora, with the mixture of attraction and repulsion which, in this connection, was now more or less habitual to him. The more he saw of Dora, the more he wondered — at her goodness and her ignorance. Her positive dislike to, and alienation from knowledge was amazing. At the first indication of certain currents of thought he could see her soul shrivelling and shrinking like a green leaf near flame. As he had gradually realised, she had with some difficulty forgiven him the attempt to cure Daddy's drinking through a doctor; that anyone should think sin could be reached by medicine — it was in effect to throw doubt on the necessity of God's grace! And she could not bear that he should give her information from the books he read about the Bible or early Christianity. His detached, though never hostile, tone was clearly intolerable to her. She could not and would not suffer it, would take any means of escaping it.

Then that Passion-week sermon she had taken him to hear; which had so moved her, with which she had so sweetly and persistently assumed his sympathy! The preacher had been a High Church Canon with a considerable reputation for eloquence. The one o'clock service had been crowded with business and professional men. David had never witnessed a more tempting opportunity. But how hollow and empty the whole result! What foolish sentimental emphasis, what unreality, what contempt for knowledge, yet what a show of it! —

[101]

an elegant worthless jumble of Gibbon, Horace, St. Augustine, Wesley, Newman and Mill, mixed with the cheap picturesque — with moonlight on the Campagna, and sunset on Niagara — and leading, by the loosest rhetoric, to the most confident conclusions. He had the taste of it in his mouth still. Fresh from the wrestle of mind into which Berkeley had led him, he fell into a new and young indignation with sermon and preacher.

Yet, all the same, if you asked how man could best live apart from thinking, how the soul could put its foot on the brute — where would Dora stand then? What if the true key to life lay not in knowledge, but in will? What if knowledge in the true sense was ultimately impossible to man, and if Christianity not only offered, but could give him the one thing truly needful — his own will, regenerate?

But with the first sight of the Clough End streets these high debates were shaken from the mind.

He ran up the Kinder road, with its villanous paving of cobbles and coal dust, its mills to the right, down below in the hollow, skirting the course of the river, and its rows of workmen's homes to the left climbing the hill — in a tremor of excitement. Six years! Would anyone recognise him? Ah! there was Jerry's 'public, an evil-looking weather-stained hole; but another name swung on the sign; poor Jerry! — was he, too, gone the way of orthodox and sceptic alike? And here

[102]

was the Foundry — David could hardly prevent himself from marching into the yard littered with mysterious odds and ends of old iron which had been the treasure house of his childhood. But no Tom — and no familiar face anywhere.

Yes! — there was the shoemaker's cottage, where the prayer-meeting had been, and there, on the threshold, looking at the approaching figure, stood the shoemaker's wife, the strange woman with the mystical eyes. David greeted her as he came near. She stared at him from under a bony hand put up against the sun, but did not apparently recognise him; he, seized with sudden shyness, quickened his pace, and was soon out of her sight.

In a minute or two lie was at the Dye-works, which mark the limit of the town, and the opening of the valley road. Every breath now was delight. The steep wooded hills to the left, the red-brown shoulder of the Scout in front, were still wrapt in torn and floating shreds of mist. But the sun was everywhere — above in the slowly triumphing blue, in the mist itself, and below, on the river and the fields. The great wood climbing

to his left was all embroidered on the brown with palms and catkins, or broken with patches of greening larch, which had a faintly luminous relief amid the rest. And the dash of the river — and the scents of the fields! He leapt the wall of the lane, and ran down to the water's edge, watching a dipper among the stones in a passion of pleasure which had no words.

[103]

Then up and on again, through the rough uneven lane, higher and higher into the breast of the Scout. What if he met Jim Wigson on the way? What if Aunt Hannah, still unreconciled, turned him from the door? No matter! Rancour and grief have no hold on mortals walking in such an April world — in such an exquisite and sunlit beauty. On! let thought and nature be enough! Why complicate and cumber life with relations that do but give a foothold to pain, and offer less than they threaten?

There is smoke rising from Wigson's, and figures moving in the yard. Caution! — keep close under the wall. And here at last is Needham Farm, at the top of its own steep pitch, with the sycamore trees in the lane beside it, the Red Brook sweeping round it to the right, the rough gate below, the purple Scout mist-wreathed behind. There are cows lowing in the yard, a horse grazes in the front field; through the little garden gate a gleam of sun strikes on the struggling crocuses and daffodils which come up year after year, no man heeding them; there is a clucking of hens, a hurry of water, a flood of song from a lark poised above the field. The blue smoke rises into the misty air; the sun and the spring caress the rugged lonely place.

With a beating heart David opened the gate into the field, walked round the little garden, let himself into the yard, and with a hasty glance at the windows mounted the steps and knocked.

No answer. He knocked again. Surely Aunt

[104]

Hannah must be about somewhere. Eleven o'clock; how quiet the house was!

This time there was a clatter of a chair on a flagged floor inside, and a person with a slow laboured step came and opened.

It was Reuben. He adjusted his spectacles with difficulty, and stared at the intruder.

'Uncle Reuben! — I thought it was such a fine day, I'd just run over and see the old place, and bring you some news,' said David, smiling and holding out his hand.

Reuben took it, stupefied. 'Davy,' he said, trembling. Then with a sudden movement he whipped the door to behind him, and shut it close.

'Whist!' he said, putting his old finger to his lip. 'T' servant's just settlin her i' th' kitchen. She's noa ready yet — she's been terr'ble bad th'neet. Coom yo here.' And he descended the steps with infinite care, and led David to the wood-shed.

'Is Aunt Hannah ill?' asked David, astonished.

Reuben leant against the wall of the shed, and took off his spectacles, as though to wipe them with his old and shaking hands. Then David saw a sort of convulsion pass across his ungainly face.

'Aye,' he said, looking down, 'aye, she's broken is Hannah. Yo didna know?'

'I've heard nothing.'

Reuben recounted the facts. Since her stroke of last spring, and the partial recovery which had followed

[105]

upon it, there had been little apparent change, except perhaps in the direction of slowly increasing weakness. She was a wreck, and likely to remain so. Hardly anybody but Reuben could understand her now, and she rarely let him out of her sight. He could not get time to attend to the farm, was obliged to leave things to the hired man, and was in trouble often about his affairs.

‘Bit yo see, she hasna t’ reet use of her speäch,’ he said, excusing himself humbly to this handsome city nephew. ‘An’ she conno gie ower snipin aw at onst. ‘Twudna be human natur’. An’t’gell’s worritin’an’ I mun tell her what t’ missis says.’

David asked if he might see her, or should he just turn back to the town? Reuben protested, his hospitality and family feeling aroused, his poor mind torn with conflicting motives.

‘I believe she’d fratch if she didna see tha,’ he said at last. ‘A’ll just goo ben, and ask.’

He went in, and David remained in the wood-she-d, staring out at the familiar scene, at Louie’s window, at the steps where he and she had fed the fowls together.

The door opened again, and Reuben reappeared on the steps, agitated and beckoning.

David went in, stepping softly, holding his blue cloth cap in his hand. In another instant he stood beside the old cushioned seat in the kitchen, looking down at Hannah.

This Hannah! this his childhood’s enemy! this

[106]

shawled and shrunken figure with the white parchment face and lantern cheeks!

He stooped to her and said something about why he had come. Reuben listened wondering.

‘Louie’s married and got a babby — dosto hear, Hannah? And he — t’lad — did yo iver see sich a yan for growin?’

He wished to be mildly jocular. Hannah’s face did not move. She had just touched her nephew with her cold wasted hand. Now she beckoned to him to sit down at her right. He did so, and then for the first time he could believe that Hannah, the old Hannah, was there beside them. For as she slowly studied his dress, the Inverness cape then as now a favourite garb in Manchester, the hand holding the cap, refined since she saw it last by commerce with books and pens rather than hurdles and sheep, the broad

shoulders, the dark head, her eye for the first time met his, full, and a weird thrill went through him. For that eye — dulled, and wavering — was still Hannah. The old hate was in it, the old grudge, all that had been at least for him and Louie the inmost and characteristic soul of their tyrant. He knew in an instant that she had in her mind the money of which he and his sister had robbed her, and beyond that the offences of their childhood, the infamy of their mother. If she could, she would have hurled them all upon him. As it was, she was silent, but that brooding eye, like a smouldering spark in her blanched face, spoke for her.

[107]

Reuben tried to talk. But a weight lay on him and David. The gaunt head in the coarse white nightcap turned now to one, now to the other, pursued them phantom-like. Presently he insisted that his nephew must dine, avoiding Hannah's look. David would much rather have gone without; but Reuben, affecting joviality, called the servant, and some food was brought. No attempt was made to include Hannah in the meal. David supposed that it was now necessary to feed her.

Reuben talked disjointedly of the neighbours and his stock, and asked a few questions, without listening to the answers, about David's affairs, and Louie's marriage. In Hannah's presence his poor dull wits were not his own; he could in truth think of nothing but her.

After the meal, however, when a draught of ale had put some heart in him, he got up with an air of resolution.

'I mun goo and see what that felly's been doin' wi' th' Huddersfield beëasts,' he said; 'wilta coom wi'me, Davy? Mary!'

He called the little maid. Hannah suddenly said something incoherent which David could not understand. Reuben affected not to hear.

'Mary, gie your mistress her dinner, like a good gell. An' keep t'house-door open, soa at she can knock wi' t' stick if she wants owt.'

He stood before her restless and ashamed, afraid to look at her. Then he suddenly stooped and kissed her

[108]

on the forehead. David felt a lump in his throat. As he took leave of her the spell, as it were, of Reuben's piteous affection came upon him. He saw nothing but a dying and emaciated woman, and taking her hand in his, he said some kind natural words.

The hand dropped from his like a stone. As he stood at the door behind Reuben, the servant came forward with a plate of something which she put down inside the fender. As she did so, she awkwardly upset the fire-irons, which fell with a crash. Hannah started upright in her chair, with a rush of half-articulate words, grasping fiercely for her stick with glaring eyes. The servant, a wild moorland lass, fled terrified, and at the 'house' door turned and made a face at David.

Outside Reuben slowly mastered himself, and woke up to some real interest in Louie's doings. David told him her story frankly, so far as it could be separated from his own, and, pressed by Reuben's questions, even revealed at last the matter of the six hundred pounds. Reuben could not get over it. Sandy's 'six hunderd pund' which he had earned with the sweat of his brow, all handed over to that minx Louie, and wasted by her and a rascally French husband in a few months — it was more than he could bear.

'Aye, aye, marryin's varra weel,' he said impatiently. 'A grant tha it's a great sin coomin thegither without marry in. But Sandy's six hunderd pund! Noa, I conno abide sich wark.'

And he fell into sombre silence, out of which David

[109]

could hardly rouse him. Except that he said once, 'And we that had kep' it so long. I'd better never ha gien it tha.' And clearly that was the bitter thought in his mind. The

sacrifice that had taxed all his moral power, and, as he believed, brought physical ruin on Hannah, had been for nothing, or worse than nothing. Neither he nor David nor anyone was the better for it.

‘I must go over the shoulder to Frimley,’ said David at last. They had made a half-hearted inspection of the stock in the home fields, and were now passing through the gate on to the moor. ‘I must see Margaret Dawson again before I take the train back.’

Reuben looked astonished and shook his head as though he did not remember anything about Margaret Dawson. He walked on beside his nephew for a while in silence. The Red Brook was leaping and dancing beside them, the mountain ashes were just bursting into leaf, the old Smithy was ahead of them on the heathery slope, and to their left the Downfall, full and white, thundered over its yellow rocks.

But they had hardly crossed the Red Brook to mount the peak beyond when Reuben drew up.

‘Noa’ — he said restlessly — ‘noa. I mun goo back. T’gell’s flighty and their ’s aw maks o’ mischief i’ yoong things.’ He stood and held his nephew by the hand, looking at him long and wistfully. As he did so a calmer expression stole for an instant into the poor troubled eyes.

‘Very like a’st not see tha again, Davie. We niver

[110]

know. Livin’s hard soom times — soa’s deein, folks say. I’m often fret’nt of deein’ — but I should na be. Theer’s noan so mich peace here, and we *know* that wi’ the Lord theer’s peace.’

He gave a long sigh — all his character was in it — so tortured was it and hesitating.

They parted, and the young man climbed the hill, looking back often to watch the bent figure on the lower path. The spell had somehow vanished from the sunshine, the thrill from the moorland air. Life was once more cruel, implacable.

He walked fast to Frimley, and made for the cottage of Margaret's brother. He remembered its position of old.

A woman was washing in the 'house' or outer kitchen. She received him graciously. The weekly money which in one way or another he had never failed to pay—since he first undertook it, had made him well known to her and her husband. With a temper quite unlike that of the characteristic northerner, she showed no squeamishness at all about the matter. If it hadn't been for his help, they would just have sent Margaret to the workhouse, she said bluntly; for they had many mouths to feed, and couldn't have burdened themselves with an extra one. She was quite 'silly' and often troublesome.

'Is she here?' David asked.

'Aye, if yo goo ben, yo'll find her,' said the woman, carelessly pointing to an inner door. 'I

[111]

conno ha her in here washin days, nor the children noather.'

David opened the door pointed out to him. He found himself in a rough weaving shed almost filled by a large hand-loom, with its forest of woodwork rising to the ceiling, its rolls of perforated pattern-paper, its great cylinders below, and many-coloured shuttles to either hand. But to-day it stood idle, the weaver was not at work. The room was stuffy but cold, and inexpressibly gloomy in this silence of the loom.

Where was Margaret? After a minute's search, there, beyond the loom, sitting by a fireless grate, was a little figure in a bedgown and nightcap, poking with a stick amid the embers, and as it seemed crooning to itself.

David made his way up to her, inexpressibly moved.

'Margaret!'

She did not know him in the least. She had a starved-looking cat on her lap, which she was huddling against her breast. The face had fallen away almost to nothing, so small and thin it was. She was dirty and unkempt. Her still brown hair, once so daintily neat, straggled out beneath her torn cap; her print bed-gown was pinned across her, her linsey skirt was in holes; everywhere the same tale of age neglected and unloved.

When David first stood before her she drew back with a terrified look, still clutching the cat tightly. But, as he smiled at her, with the tears in his eyes,

[112]

speaking her name tenderly, her frightened look relaxed, and she remained staring at him with the shrinking furtive expression of a quite young child. He knelt down beside her.

‘Margaret — dear Margaret — don’t you know me?’ She did not answer, but her wrinkled eyes, still blue and vaguely sweet, wavered under his, and it seemed to him that every now and then a shiver of cold ran through her old and frail body. He went on gently, trying to recall her wandering senses. In vain. In the middle she interrupted him with a piteous lip.

‘They promised me a ribbon for ‘t,’ she said, complainingly, in a hoarse, bronchitic voice, pointing to the animal she held, and to its lean neck adorned with a collar of plaited string, on which apparently she had just been busy, to judge from the odds and ends of string lying about.

At the same moment David became aware of a couple of children craning their heads round the comer of the loom to look, a loutish boy about eleven, and a girl rather younger. At sight of them, Margaret raised a cry of distress and alarm, with that helpless indefinable note in the voice which shows that personality, in the true sense, is no longer there. ‘Go away!’ David commanded. The children did not stir, but grinned. He made a threatening movement. Then the boy, as quick as lightning, put his tongue out at Margaret, and caught hold of his sister, and they clattered off, their mother

[113]

in the next room scolding them out into the street again.

And this the end of a creature all sacrifice, a life all affection!

He took her shivering hand in his. ‘Margaret, listen to me. You shall be better

looked after. T will see to that. No one shall be unkind to you any more. If they won't do it here, my — my — wife shall take care of you!

He lifted her hand and kissed it, putting all the pity and bitter indignation of his heart into the action. Margaret, seeing his emotion, whimpered too; otherwise she was impassive.

He left her, went into the next room, and had a long energetic talk with Margaret's sister-in-law. The woman, half ashamed, half recalcitrant, in the end promised amendment. What business it was of his she could not imagine; but the small weekly addition which he offered to make to Margaret's payments, while it showed him a greater fool than before, made it impossible to put his meddling aside. She promised that Margaret should be brought into the warm, that she should have better clothes, and that the children should be kept from plaguing her.

Then he departed, and mounting the moor again, spent an hour or two wandering among the boggy fissures of the top, or sitting on the high edges of the heather, looking down over the dark and craggy splendour of the hill immediately around and beneath him,

[114]

on and away through innumerable paling shades of distance to the blue Welsh border. His speculative fervour was all gone. Reuben, Hannah, Margaret, these figures of suffering and pain had brought him close to earth again. The longing for a human hand in his, for a home, wife, children to spend himself upon, to put at least for a while between him and this un-conquerable 'something which infects the world,' became in this long afternoon a physical pain not to be resisted. He thought more and more steadily of Lucy, schooling himself, idealising her.

It was the Sunday before Whitsunday. David was standing outside a trim six-roomed house in the upper part of the little Lancashire town of Wakely, waiting for Lucy Purcell.

She came at last, flushed and discomposed, pulling the door hastily to behind her.

They walked on a short distance, talking disconnectedly of the weather, the mud, and the way on to the moor, till she said suddenly:

‘I wish people wouldn’t be so good and so trouble-some

‘Did Robert wish to keep you at home?’ inquired David, laughing.

‘Well, he didn’t want me to come out with — anybody but him,’ she said, flushing. ‘And it’s so bad, because one can’t be cross. I don’t know how it is, but they’re just the best people here that ever walked!’

[115]

She looked up at him seriously, an unusual energy in her slight face.

‘What! — a town of saints?’ asked David, mocking. It was so difficult to take Lucy seriously.

She tossed her head and insisted.

Talking very fast, and not very consecutively, she gave him an account, so far as she was able, of the life lived in this little town, a typical Lancashire town of the smaller and more homogeneous kind. All the people worked in two large spinning mills, or in a few smaller factories representing dependent industries, such as reed-making. Their work was pleasant to them. Lucy complained, with the natural resentment of the idle who see their place in the world jeopardised by the superfluous energy of the workers, that she could never get the mill girls to say that the mill hours were too long. The heat tried them, made appetites delicate, and lung mischief common. But the only thing which really troubled them was ‘half-time.’ Socially everybody knew everybody. They were passionately interested in each other’s lives and in the town’s affairs. And their religion, of a strong Protestant type expressed in various forms of Dissent, formed an ideal bond which kept the little society together, and made an authority which all acknowledged, an atmosphere in which all moved.

The picture she drew was, in truth, the picture of one of those social facts on which perhaps the future of England depends. She drew it girlishly, quite unconscious

[116]

of its large bearings, gossiping about this person and that, with a free expenditure of very dogmatic opinion on the habits and ways which were not hers. But, on the whole, the picture emerged, and David had never liked her talk so well. The little self-centred thing had somehow been made to wonder and admire; which is much for all of us.

And she, meanwhile, was instantly sensible that she was in a happy vein, that she pleased. Her eyes danced under her pretty spring hat. How proud she was to walk with him — that he had come all this way to see her! As she shyly glanced him up and down, she would have liked the village street to be full of gazers, and was almost loth to leave the public way for the loneliness of the moor. What other girl in Wakely had the prospect of such a young man to take her out? Oh! would he ever, ever ‘ask her’ — would he even come again?

At last, after a steep and muddy climb, through uninviting back ways, they were out upon the moor. An apology for a moor in David’s eyes! For the hills which surround the valley of the Irwell, in which Wakely lies, are, for the most part, green and rolling ground, heatherless and cragless. Still, from the top they looked over a wide and wind-blown scene, the bolder moors of Rochdale behind them, and in front the long green basin in which the Irwell rises. Along the valley bottoms lay the mills, with their surrounding rows of small stone houses. Up on the backs of the

[117]

moors crouched the old farms, which have watched the mills come, and will perhaps see them go; and here and there a grim-looking colliery marked a fold of the hill. The landscape on a spring day has a bracing bareness, which is not without exhilaration. The

wind blows freshly, the sun lies broadly on the hills. England, on the whole at her busiest and best, spreads before you.

They were still on the top when it occurred to them that they had a long walk in prospect — for they talked of getting to the source of the Irwell — and that it was dinner-time. So they sat down under one of the mortarless stone walls which streak the moors, and David brought out the meal that was in his pockets. They ate with laughter and chat. Pigeons passed overhead, going and coming from an old farm about a hundred yards away; the sky above them had a lark for voice singing his loudest; and in the next field a peewit was wheeling and crying. The few trees in sight were struggling fast into leaf. Nature even in this cold north was gay to-day and young.

Suddenly, in the midst of their meal, by a natural caprice and reaction of the mind, as David sat looking down on slate roofs and bare winding valley, across the pale, rain-beaten grass of the moor, all the northern English detail vanished from his eyes. For one suffocating instant he saw nothing but a great picture gallery, its dimly storied walls and polished floor receding into the distance. In front Velazquez' 'Infanta,' and before it, a figure bent over a canvas. Every line

[118]

and tint stood out. He heard the light varying voice, caught the complex grace of the woman, the strenuous effort of the artist.

Enough! He closed his eyes for one bitter instant; then raised them again to England and to Lucy.

There under the wall, while they were still lingering in the sun, he asked Lucy Purcell to be his wife. And Lucy, hardly believing her own foolish ears, and in a whirl of bliss and exultation past expression, nevertheless put on a few maidenly airs and graces, coquetted a little, would not be kissed all at once, talked of her father and the war that must be faced, and finally surrendered, held up her scarlet cheek for her lord's caress, and then sat speechless, hand in hand with him.

But Nature had its way. They rambled on, crossing the stone stiles which link the bare green fields on the side of the moor. When a stile appeared, Lucy would send him on in front, so that she might mount decorously, and then descend trembling upon his hand.

Presently they came to a spot where the path crossed a little streamlet, and then climbed a few rough steps in a steep bank, and so across a stile at the top.

David ran up, leapt the stile, and waited. But he had time to study the distant course of their walk, as well as the burnt and lime-strewn grass about him, for no Lucy appeared. He leant over the wall, and to his amazement saw her sitting on one of the stone steps below, crying.

[119]

He was beside her in an instant. But he could not loosen the hands clasped over her eyes.

‘Oh, why did you do it? — why did you do it? I’m not good enough — I never shall be good enough!’

For the first time since their formal kiss he put his arms round her. And as she, at last forced to look up, found herself close to the face which, in its dark refinement and power, seemed to her to-day so far, so wildly above her deserts, she saw it all quivering and changed. Never had little Lucy risen to such a moment; never again, perhaps, could she so rise. But in that instant of passionate humility she had dropped healing and life into a human heart.

Yet, was it Lucy he kissed? — Lucy he gathered in his arms? Or was it not rather Love itself? — the love he had sought, had missed, but must still seek — and seek?

[NP]

MATURITY

[NP]

CHAPTER I

‘Daddy!’ said a little voice.

The owner of it, a child of four, had pushed open a glass door, and was craning his curly head through it towards a garden that lay beyond.

‘Yes, you rascal, what do you want now?’

‘Daddy, come here!’

The voice had a certain quick stealthiness, through which, however, a little tremor of apprehension might be detected.

David Grieve, who was smoking and reading in the garden, came up to where his small son stood, and surveyed him.

‘Sandy, you’ve been getting into mischief.’

The child laid hold of his father, dragged him into the little hall, and towards the dining-room door. Arrived there, he stopped, put a finger to his lip, and laid his head plaintively on one side.

‘Zere’s an *awful* sight in zere, Daddy.’

‘You monkey, what have you been up to?’

David opened the door. Sandy first hung back, then, in a sudden enthusiasm, ran in, and pointed a

[124]

thumb pink with much sucking at the still uncleared dinner-table, which David and the child’s mother had left half an hour before.

‘Zere’s a pie!’ he said, exultantly.

And a pie there was. First, all the salt-cellars had been upset into the middle of the table, then the bits of bread left beside the plates had been crumbled in, then — the joys of wickedness growing — the mustard- pot had been emptied over the heap, some bananas had been stuck unsteadily here and there to give it feature, and finally, in a last orgie of crime, a cruet of vinegar had been discharged on the whole, and the brown streams were now meandering across the clean tablecloth.

‘Sandy, you little wretch!’ cried his father, ‘don’t you know that you have been told again and again not to touch the things on the table? Hold out your hand!’

Sandy held out a small paw, whimpered beforehand, but never ceased all the time to watch his father with eyes which seemed to be quietly on the watch for experiences.

David administered two smart pats, then rang the bell for the housemaid. Sandy stationed himself on the rug opposite his father, and looked at his reddened hand, considering.

‘I don’t seem to mind much, Daddy!’ he said at last, looking up.

‘No, sir. Daddy ’ll have to try and find something that you will mind.’

The tone was severe, and David did his best to

[125]

frown. In reality his eyes, under the frown, devoured his small son, and he had some difficulty in restraining himself from kissing the hand he had just slapped.

When the housemaid entered, however, she showed a temper which would clearly have slapped Master Sandy without the smallest compunction.

The little fellow stood and listened to her laments and denunciations with the same grave considering eyes, slipped his hand inside his father’s for protection, watched, like one enchained, the gradual demolition of the pie, and when it was all gone, and the tablecloth removed, he gave a long sigh of relief,

‘Say you’re sorry, sir, to Jane, for giving her so much extra trouble,’ commanded his father.

‘I’m soddy, Jane,’ said the child, nodding to her; ‘but it was a p — *wecious* pie, wasn’t it?’

The mixture of humour and candour in his baby eye was irresistible. Even Jane laughed, and David took him up and swung him on to his shoulder.

‘Come out, you man, into the garden, where I can keep an eye on you. Oh! by the way, are you all right again?’

This inquiry was uttered as they reached the garden seat, and David perched the child on his knee.

‘Yes, I’m *bet* — *ter*,’ said the child slowly, evidently unwilling to relinquish the dignity of illness all in a moment.

‘Well, what was the matter with you that you gave poor mammy such a bad night?’

[126]

The child was silent a moment, pondering how to express himself.

‘I was — I was a little sick outside, and a little *feelish* inside’ — he wavered on the difficult word. ‘Mammy said I had the wrong dinner yesterday at Aunt Dora’s. Zere was plums — *lots* o’ plums!’ said the child, clasping his hands on his knee, and hunching himself up in a sudden ecstasy.

‘Well, don’t go and have the wrong dinner again at Aunt Dora’s. I must tell her to give you nothing but rice pudding.’

‘Zen I shan’t go zere any more,’ said the child, with determination.

‘What, you love plums more than Aunt Dora?’ ‘No —o,’ said Sandy dubiously, ‘but plums *is* good!’

And, with a sigh of reminiscence, he threw himself back in his father’s arm, being, in fact, tired after his bad night and the further excitement of the ‘pie.’ The thumb slipped into the pink mouth, and with the other hand the child began dreamily to pull at one of his fair curls. The attitude meant going to sleep, and David had, in fact, hardly settled him, and drawn a light overcoat which lay near over his small legs, before the fringed eyelids sank.

David held him tenderly, delighting in the weight, the warmth, the soft even breath of his sleeping son. He managed somehow to relight his pipe, and then sat on, dreamily content, enjoying the warm September

[127]

sunshine, and letting the book he had brought out lie unopened.

The garden in which he sat was an oblong piece of ground, with a central grass plat and some starved and meagre borders on either hand. The gravel in the paths had blackened, so had the leaves of the privets and the lilacs, so also had the red-brick walls of the low homely house closing up the other end of the garden. Seventy years ago this house had stood pleasantly amid fields on the northern side of Manchester; its shrubs had been luxuriant, its roses unstained. Now on every side new houses in oblong gardens had sprung up, and the hideous smoke plague of Manchester had descended on the whole district, withering and destroying.

Yet David had a great affection for his house, and it deserved it. It had been built in the days when there was more elbow-room in the world than now. The three sitting-rooms on the ground floor opened sociably into each other, and were pleasantly spacious, and the one story of bedrooms above contained, at any rate in the eyes of the tenants of the house, a surprising amount of accommodation. When all was said, however, it remained, no doubt, a very modest dwelling, at a rent of somewhere about ninety pounds a year; but as David sat contemplating it this afternoon, there rose in him again the astonishment with which he had first entered upon it, astonishment that he, David Grieve, should ever have been able to attain to it.

[128]

‘Sandy! come here directly! Where are you, sir?’

David heard the voice calling in the hall, and raised his own.

‘Lucy! all right! — he’s here.’

The glass door opened, and Lucy came out. She was very smartly arrayed in a new blue dress which she had donned since dinner; yet her looks were cross and tired.

‘Oh, David, how stupid! Why isn’t the child dressed? Just look what an object! I sent Lizzie for him ten minutes ago, and she couldn’t find him.’

‘Then Lizzie has even less brains than I supposed, said David composedly, ‘seeing that she had only to look out of a back window. What are you going to do with him?’

‘Take him out with me, of course. There are the Watsons of Fallowfield, they pestered me to bring him, and they’re at home Saturdays. And aren’t you coming too?’

‘Madam, you are unreasonable!’ said David, smiling, and putting down his pipe, he laid an affectionate hand on his wife’s arm. ‘I went careering about the world with you last Saturday and the Saturday before, and this week end I must take for reading. There is an Oxford man who has been writing me infuriated letters this week because I won’t let him know whether we will take up his pamphlet or no. I must get that read, and a good many other things, before tomorrow night.’

[129]

‘Oh, I know!’ said Lucy, pettishly, ‘There’s always something in the way of what I want. Soon I shan’t see anything of you at all: it will be all business, and yet not a penny more to spend! Well, then, give me Sandy.’

David hesitated.

‘Do you think you’ll take him?’ he said, bending over the little fellow. ‘He doesn’t look a bit himself to-day. It’s those abominable plums of Dora’s!’

He spoke with fierceness, as though Dora had been the veriest criminal.

‘Well, but what nonsense!’ cried Lucy; ‘they don’t upset other children. I can’t think what’s wrong with him.’

‘He isn’t like other children; he’s of a finer make,’ said David, laughing at his own folly, but more than half sincere in it all the same.

Lucy laughed too, and was appeased. She bent down to look at him, confessed that he was pale, and that she had better not take him lest there should be catastrophes.

‘Well, then, I must go alone,’ she said, turning away discontentedly. ‘I don’t know what’s the good of it. Nobody cares to see me without him or you.’

The last sentence came out with a sudden energy, and as she looked back towards him he saw that her cheek was flushed.

‘What, in that new gown?’ he said, smiling, and looked her up and down approvingly.

[130]

Her expression brightened.

‘Do you like it?’ she said, more graciously.

‘Very much. You look as young as when I first teased you! Come here and let me give you a” nip for new.” ’

She came docilely. He pretended to pinch the thin wrist she held out to him, and then, stooping, lightly kissed it.

‘Now go and enjoy yourself,’ he said, ‘and I’ll take care of Sandy. Don’t tire yourself. Take a cab when you want one.’

She was moving away when a thought struck her.

‘What are you going to say to Lord Drifffield?’

A cloud crossed David’s look. ‘Well, what am I to say to him? You don’t really want to go, Lucy?’

In an instant the angry look came back.

‘Oh, very well!’ she cried. ‘If you’re ashamed of me, and don’t care to take me about with you, just say it, that’s all!’

‘As if I wanted to go myself!’ he remonstrated. ‘Why, I should be bored to death; so would you. I don’t believe there would be a person in the house whom either

of us would ever have seen before, except Lord Drifffield. And I can see Lord Drifffield, and his books too, in much more comfortable ways than by going to stay with him.'

Lucy stood silent a moment, trying to contain herself, then she broke out:

'That is just like you!' she said, in a low bitter

[131]

voice; 'you won't take any chance of getting on. It's always the way. People say to me that you're so clever — that you're thought so much of in Manchester, you might be anything you like. And what's the good? — that's what I think! If you do earn more money you won't let us live any differently. It's always, can't we do without this? and can't we do without that? And as to knowing people, you won't take any trouble at all! Why can't we get on, and make new friends, and be — be — as good as anybody? other people do. I believe you think I should disgrace myself — I should put my knife in my mouth, or something, if you took me to Lord Drifffield's. I can behave myself 'perfectly, thank you.'

And Lucy looked at her husband in a perfect storm of temper and resentment. Her prettiness had lost much of its first bloom; the cheek-bones, always too high, were now more prominent than in first youth, and the whole face had a restless thinness which robbed it of charm, save at certain rare moments of unusual moral or physical well-being. David, meeting his wife's sparkling eyes, felt a pang compounded of many mixed compunctions and misgivings.

'Look here, Lucy!' he said, laying down his pipe, and stretching out his free hand to her, 'don't say those things. They hurt me, and you don't mean them. Come and sit down a moment, and let's make up our minds about Lord Drifffield.'

Unwillingly she let herself be drawn down beside

[132]

him on the garden bench. These quarrels and reproaches were becoming a necessity and a pleasure to her. David felt, with a secret dread, that the habit of them had been growing upon her.

‘I haven’t done so very badly for you, have I?’ he said, affectionately, as she sat down, taking her two gloved hands in his one.

Lucy vehemently drew them away.

‘Oh, if you mean to say,’ she cried, her eyes flaming, ‘that I had no money, and ought just to be thankful for what I can get, just *say* it, that’s all!’

This time David flushed.

‘I think, perhaps, you’d better go and pay your calls,’ he said, after a minute; ‘we can talk about this letter some other time.’

Lucy sat silent, her chest heaving. As soon as ever in these little scenes between them he began to show resentment, she began to give way.

‘I didn’t mean that,’ she said, uncertainly, in a low voice, looking ready to cry.

‘Well, then, suppose you don’t say it,’ replied David, after a pause. ‘If you’ll try and believe it, Lucy. I don’t want to go to Lord Driffield’s simply and solely because I am sure we should neither of us enjoy it. Lady Driffield is a stuck-up sort of person, who only cares about her own set and relations. "We should be patronised, we should find it difficult to be ourselves — there would be no profit for anybody. Lord Driffield would be too busy to look after us;

[133]

besides, he has more power anywhere than in his own house.’

‘No one could patronise you,’ said Lucy, firing up again.

‘I don’t know,’ said David, with a smile and a stretch; ‘I’m shy — on other people’s domains. If they’d come here I should know how to deal with them.’

Lucy was silent for a while, twisting her mouth discontentedly. David observed her. Suddenly he held out his hand to her again, relenting.

‘Do you really want to go so much, Lucy?’

‘Of course I do,’ she said, pouting, in a quick injured tone. ‘It’s — it’s a chance, and I want to see what it’s like; and I should hardly have to buy any- thing new, unless it’s a new bonnet, and I can make that myself.’

David sat considering.

‘Well!’ he said at last, trying to stifle his sigh, ‘I don’t mind. I’ll write and accept.’

Lucy’s eye gleamed. She edged closer to her husband.

‘You won’t mind very much? It’s only two nights. Isn’t Sandy cramping your arm?’

‘Oh, we shall get through, I dare say. No — the boy’s all right. I say’ — with a groan — ‘shall I have to get a new dress suit?’

‘Yes, of *course*,’ said Lucy, with indignant eagerness.

‘Well then, if you don’t go off, and let me earn

[134]

some money, we shall be in the Bankruptcy Court. Good-bye! I shall take the boy into the study, and cover him up while I work.’

Lucy stood before him an instant, then stooped and kissed him on the forehead. She would have liked to say a penitent word or two, but there was still something hard and hot in her heart which prevented her. Yet her husband, as he sat there, seemed to her the handsomest and most desirable of men.

David nodded to her kindly, and sat watching her slim straight figure as she tripped away from him across the garden and disappeared into the house. Then he bent over Sandy and raised him in his arms.

‘Don’t wake, Sandy!’ he said softly, as the little man half opened his eyes — ‘Daddy’s going to put you to bye in the study.’

And he carried him in, the child breathing heavily against his shoulder, and deposited his bundle on an old horsehair sofa in the corner of his own room, turning the little face away from the light, and wrapping up the bare legs.

Then he sat down to his work. The room in which he sat was made for work. It was walled with plain deal bookcases, which were filled from floor to ceiling, largely with foreign books, as the paper covers testified.

For the rest, anyone looking round would have noticed a spacious writing-table in the window, a large and battered armchair beside the fire, a photograph of Lucy over the mantelpiece, oddly flanked by an

[135]

engraving of Goethe and the head of the German historian Ranke, a folding cane chair which was generally used by Lucy whenever she visited the room, and the horsehair sofa, whereon Sandy was now sleeping amid a surrounding litter of books and papers which only just left room for his small person. If there were other chairs and tables, they were covered deep in literature of one kind or another, and did not count. The large window looked on the garden, and the room opened at the back into the drawing-room, and at one side into the dining-room. On the rug slept the short-haired black collie, whom David had once protected from Louie's dislike — old, blind, and decrepit, but still beloved, especially by Sandy, and still capable of barking a toothless defiance at the outer world.

It was a room to charm a student's eyes, especially on this September afternoon with its veiled and sleepy sun stealing in from the garden, and David fell into his chair, refilled his pipe, and stretched out his hand for a batch of manuscript which lay on his table, with an unconscious sigh of satisfaction.

The manuscript represented a pamphlet on certain trade questions by a young Oxford economist. For the firm of Grieve & Co., of Manchester, had made itself widely known for some five years past to the intelligence of northern England by its large and increasing trade in pamphlets of a political, social, or economical kind. They supplied mechanics' institutes, political associations, and workmen's clubs; nay, more, they had a

136]

system of hawkers of their own, which bade fair to extend largely. To be taken up by Grieve & Co. was already an object to young politicians, inventors, or social reformers, who might wish for one reason or another to bring their names or their ideas before the working-class of the North. And Grieve & Co. meant David, sitting smoking and reading in his armchair.

He gave the production now in his hands some careful reading for half an hour or more, then he suddenly threw it down.

‘Stuff and nonsense!’ he said to himself. ‘The man has got the facts about those Oldham mills wrong somehow, I’m certain of it. Where’s that letter I had last week?’ and, jumping up, he took a bunch of keys out of his pocket and opened a drawer in his writing-table. The drawer contained mostly bundles of letters, and to the right hand a number of loose ones recently received, and not yet sorted or tied. He looked through these, found what he wanted, and was about to close the drawer when his attention was caught by a thick black note-book lying towards the back of it. He took it out, reminded by it of something he had meant to do, and carried it off with the Oldham letter to his chair. Once settled there again, he turned himself to the confutation of his pamphleteer. But not for long. The black book on his knee exercised a disturbing influence; his under-mind began to occupy itself with it, and at last the Oldham letter was hastily put down, and, taking out a pocket pen, David, with a smile at his own

[137]

delinquency, opened the black book, turned over many closely written pages, and settled down to write another.

The black book was his journal. He had kept it intermittently since his marriage, rather as a journal of thought than as a journal of events, and he had to add to it to-day some criticisms of a recent book by Renan which had been simmering in his mind for a week or two. Still it contained a certain number of records of events, and,

taken generally, its entries formed an epitome of everything of most import — practical, moral, or intellectual — which had entered into David Grieve's life during the eight years since his marriage.

For instance: —

'April 10, 1876. — Our son was born this morning between three and four o'clock, after more than three years of marriage, when both of us had begun to despair a little. Now that he is come. I am decidedly interested in him, but the paternal relation hardly begins at birth, as the mother's does. The father, who has suffered nothing, cannot shut his eyes to the physical ugliness and weakness, the clash of pain and effort, in which the future man begins; the mother, who has suffered everything, seems by a special spell of nature to feel nothing after the birth but the mystery and wonder of the new creature, the life born from her life — flesh of her flesh — breath of her breath. Else why is Lucy — who bears pain hardly, and had looked

[138]

forward much less eagerly to the child, I think, than I had —so proud and content just to lie with the hungry creature beside her? while I am half inclined to say, What! so little for so much? — and to spend so full an energy in resenting the pains of maternity as an unmeaning blot on the scheme of things, that I have none left for a more genial emotion. Altogether, I am disappointed in myself as a father. I seem to have no imagination, and at present I would rather touch a loaded torpedo than my son.'

'April 30. — Lucy wishes to have the child christened at St. Damian's, and, though it goes against me, I have made no objection. And if she wishes it I shall go. It is not a question of one's own personal consistency or sincerity. The new individuality seems to me to have a claim in the matter, which I have no business to override because I happen to think in this way or that. My son when he grows up may be an ardent Christian. Then, if I had failed to comply with the national religious requirement, and had let him go unbaptized, because of my own beliefs or non-beliefs, he might, I think, rightly reproach me: "I was helpless, and you took advantage."

‘Education is different. The duty of the parent to hand on what is best and truest in his own mind to the child is clear. Besides, the child goes on to carry what has been taught him into the open agora of the world’s thought, and may there test its value as he

[139]

pleases. But the omission, in a sense irreparable, of a definite and customary act like baptism from a child’s existence, when hereafter the omission may cause him a pang quite disproportionate to any likes or dislikes of mine in the matter, appears to me unjust.

‘I talk as if Lucy were not concerned! — or Dora! In reality I shall do as Lucy wills. Only they must not misunderstand me for the future. If my son lives, his father will not hide his heart from him.

‘I notice for the first time that Lucy is anxious and troubled about her father. She would like now to be friends, and she took care that the news of the child’s birth should be conveyed to him at once through a common acquaintance. But he has taken no notice. In some natures the seeds of affection seem to fall only on the sand and rock of the heart, where because they have “no depth of earth they wither away;” while the seeds of hatred find the rich and good ground, where they spring and grow a hundred-fold.’

‘*December 8, 1877.* — I have just been watching Sandy on the rug between the two dogs — Tim, and the most adorable black and tan *dachshund* that Lord Driffield has just given me. Sandy had a bit of biscuit, and was teasing his friends — first thrusting it under their noses, and then, just as they were preparing to gulp, drawing it back with a squeal of joy. The child’s evident mastery and sense of humour, the grave puzzled faces of the dogs, delighted me. Then a

[140]

whim seized me. I knelt down on the rug, and asked him to give me some. He held out the biscuit and laid it against my lips; I saw his eye waver; there was a gleam of mischief — the biscuit was half snatched away, and I felt absurdly chagrined. But in an instant the little face melted into the sweetest, keenest smile, and he almost choked me in his eagerness to thrust the biscuit down my throat. “Poor Daddy! Daddy *so* hungry.”

‘I recall with difficulty that I once thought him ugly and unattractive, poor little worm! On the contrary, it is quite clear that, whatever he may be when he grows up — I don’t altogether trust his nose and mouth — for a child he is a beauty! His great brown eyes — so dark and noticeable beneath the fair hair in the little apple-blossom face — let you into the very heart of him. It is by no means a heart of unmixed goodness. There is a curious aloofness in his look sometimes, as of some pure intelligence beholding good and evil with the same even speculative mind. But this strange mood breaks up so humanly! he has such wiles — such soft wet kisses! such a little flute of a voice when he wants to coax or propitiate you!’

‘*March 1878.* — My printing business has been growing very largely lately. I have now worked out my profit-sharing scheme with some minuteness, and yesterday the men, John, and I had a conference. In part, my plan is copied from that of the “Maison

[141]

Leclair,” but I have worked a good deal of my own into it. Our English experience of this form of industrial partnership has been on the whole unfavourable; but, after a period of lassitude, experiments are beginning to revive. The great rock ahead lies in one’s relation to the trade unions — one must remember that.

‘To the practised eye the men to-day showed signs of accepting it with cordiality, but the north-country man is before all things cautious, and I dare say a stranger would have thought them cool and suspicious. We meet again next week.

‘I must explain the thing to Lucy — it is her right. She may resent it vehemently, as she did my refusal, in the autumn, to take advantage of that London

opening. It will, of course, restrict our income just as it was beginning to expand quickly. I have left myself adequate superintendence wages, a bonus on these wages calculated in the same way as that of the men, a fixed percentage on the capital already employed in the business, and a nominal thirty per cent, of the profits. But I can see plainly that however the business extends, we — she and I — shall never make our fortune” out of it. For beyond the fifty per cent, of the profits to be employed in bonuses on wages, and the twenty per cent, set aside for the benefit and pension society, my thirty per cent, must provide me with what I want for various purposes connected with the well-being of the workers, and for the widening of our operations on the publishing side, in a more or less propagandist spirit.

[142]

‘My bookselling business proper is, of course, at present outside the scheme, and I do not see very well how anything of the kind can be applied to it. This will be a comfort to Lucy; and just now the trade both in old and foreign books is prosperous and brings me in large returns. But I cannot disguise from myself that the other experiment is likely to absorb more and more of my energies in the future. I have from sixty to eighty men now in the printing-office — a good set, take them altogether. They have been gradually learning to understand me and my projects. The story of what Leclair was able to do for the lives and characters of his men is wonderful!

‘My poor little wife! I try to explain these things to her, but she thinks that I am merely making mad experiments with money, teaching workmen to be “uppish” and setting employers against me. When in my turn I do my best to get at what she means by “getting on,” I find it comes to a bigger house, more servants, a carriage, dinner parties, and, generally, a move to London, bringing with it a totally new circle of acquaintance who need never know exactly what she or I rose from. She does not put all this into words, but I think I have given it accurately.

‘And I should yield a great deal more than I do if I had any conviction that these things, when got, would make her happy. But every increase in our scale of living

since we began has seemed rather to make her restless, and fill her with cravings which yet she can

[143]

never satisfy. In reality she lives by her affections, as most women do. One day she wants to lose sight of everyone who knew her as Purcell's daughter, or me as Purcell's assistant; the next she is fretting to be reconciled to her father. In the same way, she thinks I am hard about money; she sees no attraction in the things which fill me with enthusiasm; but at the same time, if I were dragged into a life where I was morally starved and discontented, she would suffer too. No, I must steer through — judge for her and myself — and make life as pleasant to her in little ways as it can be made.

'Ah! the gospel of "getting on" — it fills me with a kind of rage. There is an essential truth in it, no doubt, and if I had not been carried away by it at one time, I should have far less power over circumstances than I now have. But to square the whole of this mysterious complex life to it — to drop into the grave at last, having missed, because of it, all that sheds dignity and poetry on the human lot, all that makes it worth while or sane to hope in a destiny for man diviner and more lasting than appears — horrible!

'Yet Lucy may rightly complain of me. I get dreamy — I procrastinate. And it is unjust to expect that her ideal of social pleasure should be the same as mine. I ought to — and I will — make more effort to please her.'

'*July 1878.* — I am in Paris again. Yesterday afternoon I wandered about looking at those wrecks of the

[144]

Commune which yet remain. The new Hotel de Ville is rising, but the Tuileries still stands charred and ruined against the sky, an object lesson for Belleville. I walked up to the Arc de l'Etoile, and coming back I strolled into a little leafy open-air restaurant for a

cup of coffee. Suddenly I recognised the place — the fountain — a large quicksilver ball — a little wooden pavilion festooned with coloured lamps. It was as though eight years were wiped away.

‘I could not stay there. But the shock soon subsided. There is something bewildering, de-personalising, in the difference between one stage of life and another. In certain moods I feel scarcely a thread of identity between my present self and myself of eight years ago.

‘This morning I have seen Louie, after an interval of three years. Montjoie keeps out of my way, and, as a matter of fact, I have never set eyes on him since I passed him close to the Auteuil station in July 1870. From Louie’s account, he is now a confirmed drunkard, and can hardly ever be got to do any serious work. Yet she brought me a clay study of their little girl which he threw off in a lucid interval two or three months ago, surely as good as anybody or anything, astonishingly delicate and true. Just now, apparently, he has a bad fit on, and but for my allowance to her she tells me they would be all but destitute. It is remarkable to see how she has taken possession of this money and with what shrewdness she manages it. I suspect her of certain small Bourse speculations — she has all the

[145]

financial slang on the tip of her tongue — but if so, they succeed. For she keeps herself and the child, scornfully allows him so much for his pocket in the week, and even, as I judge from the consideration she enjoys in the church she frequents, finds money for her own Catholic purposes.

‘Louie a fervent Catholic and an affectionate mother! The mixture of old and new in her — the fresh habits of growth imposed on the original plant — startle me at every turn. Her Catholicism, which resolves itself, perhaps, into the cult of a particular church and of two or three admirable and sagacious priests, seems to me one long intrigue of a comparatively harmless kind. It provides her with enemies, allies, plots,

battles, and surprises. It ministers, too, to her love of colour and magnificence — a love which implies an artistic sense, and would have been utilised young if she had belonged to an artistic family.

‘But just as I am adapting myself to the new Louie the old reappears! She was talking to me yesterday of her exertions at Easter for the Easter decorations, and describing to me in superlatives the final splendour of the results, and the compliments which had been paid her by one or two of the clergy, when the name of a lady who seems to have been connected with the church longer than Louie has, and is evidently her rival in various matters of pious service and charitable organisation, came to her lips. Instantly her face flamed, and the denunciation she launched was quite in the old

[146]

Clough End and Manchester vein. I was to understand that this person was a mean, designing, worthless creature, a hideous object besides, and “made up;” and as to her endeavours to ingratiate herself with Father this and Father that, the worst motives were hinted at.

‘Another little incident struck me more painfully still. Her devotion to the little Cecile is astonishing. She is miserable when the child has a finger-ache, and seems to spend most of her time in dressing and showing her off. Yet I suspect she is often irritable and passionate even with Cecile; the child has a shrinking quiet way with her which is not natural. And to-day, when she was in the middle of cataloguing Montjoie’s enormities, and I was trying to restrain her, remembering that Cecile was looking at a book on the other side of the room, she suddenly called to the child imperiously:

‘“Cécile! come here and tell your uncle what your father is!”

‘And, to my horror, the little creature walked across to us, and, as though she were saying a lesson, began to *débiter* a set speech about her father’s crimes and her mother’s wrongs, containing the wildest abuse of her father, and prompted throughout by the excited and scarlet Louie. I tried to stop it; but Louie only pushed me away. The child rose to her part, became perfectly white, declaimed with a shrill fury,

indescribably repulsive, and at the end sank into a chair, hardly able to stand. Then Louie covered her with kisses,

[147]

made me get wine for her, and held her cradled in her arms till it was time for them to go.

‘On the way downstairs, when Cecile was in front of us, I spoke my mind about this performance in the strongest way. But Louie only laughed at me. “It shall be quite plain that she is mine and not his! I don’t run away from him; I keep him from dying on the streets like a dog; but his child and everyone else shall know what he is.”

‘It is a tigress passion. Poor little child! — a thin, brown, large-eyed creature, with rather old, affected manners, and a small clinging hand.’

‘*July 4th.* —Father Lenoir, Louie’s director, has just been to call upon me; Louie insisted on my going to a festival service at St. Eulalie this morning, and introduced me to him — an elderly, courteous, noble-faced priest of a fine type. He was discreet, of course, and made me feel the enormous difference that exists between an outsider and a member of the one flock. But I gathered that the people among whom she is now thrown perfectly understand Louie. By means of the subtle and powerful discipline of the Church, a discipline which has absorbed the practical wisdom of generations, they have established a hold upon her. And they work on her also through the child. But he gave me to understand that there had been crises; that the opportunities for and temptations to dissolute living which beset Montjoie’s wife were endless; and it was a marvel that

[148]

under such circumstances a being so wild had yet kept straight.

‘I shook him warmly by the hand at parting, and thanked him from my heart. He somewhat resented my thanks, I thought. They imported, perhaps, a personal element into what he regards as a matter of pure ecclesiastical practice and duty.’

‘December 25th, 1878. — Lucy is still asleep; the rest of the house is just stirring. I am in my study looking out on the snowy garden and the frosted trees, which are as yet fair and white, though in a few hours the breath of Manchester will have polluted them.

‘Last night I went with Lucy and Dora to the mid- night service at St. Damian’s. It pleased them that I went; and I thought the service, with its bells, its resonant *Adeste fideles*, and its white flowers, singularly beautiful and touching. And yet, in truth, I was only happy in it because I was so far removed from it; because the legend of Bethlehem and the mythology of the Trinity are no longer matters of particular interest or debate with me; because after a period of three- fourths assent, followed by one lasting over years of critical analysis and controversial reading, I have passed of late into a conception of Christianity far more positive, fruitful, and human than I have yet held. I would fain believe it the Christianity of the future. But the individual must beware lest he wrap his personal thinking in phrases too large for it.

[149]

‘Yet, at least, one may say that it is a conception which has been gaining more and more hold on the minds of those who during the present century have thought most deeply, and laboured most disinterestedly in the field of Christian antiquity — who have sought with most learning and with fewest hindrances from circumstance to understand Christianity, whether as a history or as a philosophy.

‘I have read much German during the past year, and of late a book reviewing the whole course of religious thought in Germany since Schleiermacher, with a mixture of exhaustive information and brilliant style most unusual in a German, has absorbed all my spare hours. Such a movement! — such a wealth of collective labour and individual genius thrown into it — producing offshoots and echoes throughout the world,

transforming opinion with the slow inevitableness which belongs to all science, possessing already a great past and sure of a great future.

‘In the face of it, our orthodox public, the contented ignorance of our clergy, the solemn assurance of our religious press — what curious and amazing phenomena! Yet probably the two worlds have their analogues in every religion; and what the individual has to learn in these days at once of outward debate and of unifying social aspiration, is “to dissent no longer with the heat of a narrow antipathy, but with the quiet of a large sympathy.” ’

[150]

CHAPTER II

A FEW days after Lord Driffield’s warm invitation to Mr. and Mrs. David Grieve to spend an October Saturday-to-Monday at Benet’s Park had been accepted, Lucy was sitting in the September dusk putting some frills into Sandy’s Sunday coat, when the door opened and Dora walked in.

‘You do look done!’ said Lucy, as she held up her cheek to her cousin’s salutation. ‘What have you been about?’

‘They kept me late at the shop, for a Saturday,’ said Dora, with a sigh of fatigue, ‘and since then I’ve been decorating. It’s the Dedication Festival to-morrow.’

‘Well, the festivals don’t do you any good,’ said Lucy, emphatically; ‘they always tire you to death. When you do get to church, I don’t believe you can enjoy anything. Why don’t you let other people have a turn now, after all these years? There’s Miss Bar-ham, and Charlotte Corfield, and Mrs. Willan —they’d all do a great deal more if you didn’t do so much. I know that.’

Lucy’s cool bright eye meant, indeed, that she had

[151]

heard some remarks made of late with regard to Dora's position at St. Damian's somewhat unfavourable to her cousin. It was said that she was jealous of cooperation or interference on the part of new members of the congregation in the various tasks she had been accustomed for years past to lay upon herself in connection with the church. She was universally held to be extraordinarily good; but both in the large shop, where she was now forewoman, and at St. Damian's, people were rather afraid of her, and inclined to head oppositions to her. A certain severity had grown upon her; she was more self-confident, though it was a self-confidence grounded always on the authority of the Church; and some parts of the nature which at twenty had been still soft and plastic were now tending to rigidity.

At Lucy's words she flushed a little.

'How can they know as well as I what has to be done?' she said with energy. 'The chancel screen is *beautiful*, Lucy — all yellow fern and heather. You must go tomorrow, and take Sandy.'

As she spoke she threw off her waterproof and unloosed the strings of her black bonnet. Her dark serge dress with its white turn-down collar and armlets — worn these last for the sake of her embroidery work — gave her a dedicated, conventual look. She was paler than of old; the eyes, though beautiful and luminous, were no longer young, and lines were fast deepening in the cheeks and chin, with their round childish moulding. What had been *naïveté* and tremulous sweetness at

[152]

twenty, was now conscious strength and patience. The countenance had been fashioned — and fashioned nobly — by life; but the tool had cut deep, and had not spared the first grace of the woman in developing the saint. The hands especially, the long thin hands defaced by the labour of years, which met yours in a grasp so full of purpose and feeling, told a story and symbolised a character.

'David won't come,' said Lucy, in answer to Dora's last remark; 'he hardly ever goes anywhere now unless he hears of some one going to preach that he thinks he'll like.'

‘No — I know,’ said Dora. A shade came over her face. The attitude of David Grieve towards religion during the last four or five years represented to her the deep disappointment of certain eager hopes, perhaps one might almost call them ambitions, of her missionary youth. The disappointment had brought a certain bitterness with it, though for long years she had been sister and closest friend to both David and his wife. And it had made her doubly sensitive with regard to Lucy, whom she had herself brought over from the Baptist communion to the Church, and Sandy, who was her godchild.

After a pause, she hesitatingly brought a small paper book out of the handbag she carried.

‘I brought you this, Lucy. Father Russell sent it you. He thinks it the best beginning book you can have. He always gives it in the parish; and if the

[153]

mothers will only use it, it makes it so much easier to teach the children when they come to Sunday school.’

Lucy took it doubtfully. It was called ‘The Mother’s Catechism; ’ and, opening it, she saw that it contained a series of questions and answers, as between a mother and a child.

‘I don’t think Sandy would understand it,’ she said, slowly, as she turned it over.

‘Oh yes, he would!’ said Dora, eagerly. ‘Why, he’s nearly five, Lucy. It’s really time you began to teach him something — unless you want him to grow up a little heathen!’

The last words had a note of indignation. Lucy took no notice. She was still turning over the book.

‘And I don’t think David will like it,’ she said, still more slowly than before.

Dora flushed.

‘He can’t want to keep Sandy from being taught any religion at all! It wouldn’t be fair to you — or to the child. And if he won’t do it, if he isn’t certain enough about what he thinks, how can he mind your doing it?’

‘I don’t know,’ said Lucy, and paused. ‘I some- times think,’ she went on, with more energy, ‘that David will be quite different some day from what he has been. I’m sure he’ll want to teach Sandy.’

‘He’s got nothing to teach him!’ cried Dora. Then she added in another voice — a voice of wounded feeling

[154]

— ‘If he was to be brought up an atheist, I don’t think David ought to have asked me to be godmother.’

‘He shan’t be brought up an atheist,’ exclaimed Lucy, startled. Then, feeling the subject too much for her — for it provoked in her a mingled train of memories which she had not words enough to express — she turned back to her work, leaving the book on the table and the discussion pending.

‘David’s dreadfully late,’ she said, discontentedly, looking at the clock.

‘Where is he?’

‘Down in Ancoats, I expect. He told me he had a committee there to-day after work, about those houses he’s going to pull down. He’s got Mr. Buller and Mr. Haycraft — and — Lucy named some half-dozen more rich and well-known men — ‘to help him, and they’re going to pull down one of the worst bits of James Street, David says, and build up new houses for working people. He’s wild about it. Oh, I know we’ll have no money at all left soon!’ cried Lucy indignantly, with a shrug of her small shoulders.

Dora smiled at what seemed to her a childish petulance.

‘Why, I’m sure you’ve got everything very nice, Lucy, and all you want.’

‘No, indeed, I haven’t got all I want,’ said Lucy, looking up and frowning; ‘I never shall, neither. I want David to be — to be — like everybody else. He might be a rich man to-morrow if he wouldn’t have

[155]

such ideas. He doesn't think a bit about me and Sandy. I told you what would happen when he made that division between the bookselling and the printing, and took up with those ideas about the men. I knew he'd come not to care about the bookselling. And I was *perfectly* right! There's that printing-office getting bigger and bigger, and crowds of men waiting to be taken on, and such a lot of business doing as never was. And are we a bit the richer? Not a penny — or hardly. It's sickening to hear the way people talk about him! Why, they say the last election wouldn't have been nearly so good for the Liberals all about the North if it hadn't been for the things he's always publishing and the two papers he started last year. He might be a member of Parliament any day, and he wouldn't be a member of Parliament — not he! He told me he didn't care twopence about it. No, he doesn't care for anything but just taking *our* money and giving it to other people — there! You may say what you like, but it's true.'

The wilful energy with which Lucy spoke the last words transformed the small face — brought out the harder lines on it.

'Well, I never know what it is that *you* want exactly,' said Dora. 'I don't think you do yourself.'

Lucy stitched silently, her thin red lips pressed together. She knew perfectly well what she wanted, only she was ashamed to confess it to the religious and ascetic Dora. Her ideal of living was filled in with images and

[156]

desires abundantly derived from Manchester life, where every day she saw people grow rich rapidly, and rise as a matter of course into that upper region of gentility, carriages, servants, wines, and grouse-moors, whither, ever since it had become plain to her that David could, if he chose, easily place her there, it had been her constant craving to go. Other people came to be gentle-folks and lord it over the land — why not they? It made

her mad, as she had said to Dora, to see their money — their very own money — chucked away to other people, and they getting no good of it, and remaining mere working booksellers and printers as before.

‘Why don’t you go and help him?’ said Dora suddenly. ‘Perhaps if you were to go right in and see what he’s doing, you wouldn’t mind it so much. You might get to like it. He doesn’t want to keep everything to himself — he wants to share with those that need. If there were a good many others like that, perhaps there’d be fewer awful things happening down at Ancoats.’

A sigh rose to her lips. Her beautiful eyes grew sad.

‘Well, I did try once or twice,’ said Lucy, pettishly, ‘but I’ve always told you that sort of thing isn’t in my line. Of course I understand about giving away, and all that. But he’ll hardly let you give away at all! He says it’s pauperising the people. And the things he wants me to do — I never seem to do ‘em right, and I can’t get to care a bit about them.’

[157]

The tone in her voice betrayed a past experience which had been in some way trying and discouraging to a fine natural vanity.

Dora did not answer. She played absently with the little book on the table.

‘Oh! but he’s going to let us accept the invitation to Benet’s Park — I didn’t tell you that,’ said Lucy suddenly, her face clearing.

Dora was startled.

‘Why, I thought you told me he wouldn’t go?’

‘So I did. But — well, I let out!’ said Lucy, colouring, ‘and he’s changed his mind. But I’m rather in a fright, Dora, though I don’t tell him. Think of that big house and all those servants — I’m more frightened of *them* than of anybody! I say, *do* you think my new dresses ’ll do? You’ll come up and look at them, won’t you? Not that you’re much use about dresses.’

Dora was profoundly interested and somewhat bewildered. That her little cousin Lucy, Purcell's daughter and Daddy's niece, should be going to stay as an invited guest in a castle, with an earl and countess, was very amazing. Was it because the Radicals had got the upper hand so much at the election? She could not understand it, but some of her old girlishness, her old interest in small womanish trifles, came back upon her, and she discussed the details of what Lucy might expect so eagerly that Lucy was quite delighted with her.

[158]

In the middle of their talk a step was heard in the hall.

'Ah, there he is!' said Lucy; 'now we'll ring for supper, and I'll go and get ready.'

Dora sat alone for a few minutes, and then David came in.

'Ah! Dora, this is nice. Lucy says you will stay to supper. We get so busy, you and I, we see each other much too seldom.'

He spoke in his most cordial, brotherly tone, and, standing on the rug with his back to the fire, he looked down upon her with evident pleasure.

As for her, though the throb of her young passion had been so soon and so sternly silenced, it was still happiness to her to be in the same room with David Grieve, and any unusual kindness from him, or a long talk with him, would often send her back to her little room in Ancoats stored with a cheerful warmth of soul which helped her through many days. For of late years she had been more liable than of old to fits of fretting — fretting about her father, about her own sins and other people's, about the little worries of her Sunday school class, or the little rubs of church work. The contact with a nature so large and stimulating, though sometimes it angered and depressed her through the influence of religious considerations, was yet on the whole of infinite service to her, of more service than she knew.

'Have you forgiven me for upsetting Sandy?' she asked him, with a smile.

[159]

‘I’m on the way to it. I left him just now prancing about Lucy’s bed, and making an abominable noise. She told him to be quiet, whereupon he indignantly informed her that he was “a dwagon hunting wats.” So I imagine he hasn’t had “the wrong dinner” to-day.’

They both laughed.

‘And you have been in Ancoats?’

‘Yes,’ said David, tossing back his black hair with an animated gesture, and thrusting his hands into his pockets. ‘Yes — we are getting on. We have got the whole of that worst James Street court into our hands. We shall begin pulling down directly, and the plans for the new buildings are almost ready. And we have told all the old tenants that they shall have a prior claim on the new rooms if they choose to come back. Some will; for a good many others of course we shall be too respectable, though I am set on keeping the plans as simple and the rents as low as possible.’

Dora sat looking at him with somewhat perplexed eyes.

Her Christianity had been originally of the older High Church type, wherein the ideal of personal holiness had not yet been fused with the ideal of social service. The care of the poor and needy was, of course, indispensable to the Christian life; but she thought first and most of bringing them to church, and to the blessing and efficacy of the sacraments; then of giving them money when they were sick, and assuring to

[160]

them the Church’s benediction in dying. The modern fuss about overcrowded houses and insanitary conditions — the attack on bricks and mortar — the preaching of temperance, education, thrift — these things often seemed to Christian people of Dora’s type and day, if they spoke their true minds, to be tinged with atheism and secularism. They were jealous all the time for some- thing better. They instinctively felt that the

preeminence of certain ideas, most dear to them, was threatened by this absorption in the detail of the mere human life.

Something of this it was that passed vaguely through Dora's mind as she sat listening to David's further talk about his Ancoats scheme; and at last, influenced, perhaps, by a half-conscious realisation of her demur — it was only that — he let it drop.

'What is that book?' he said, his quick eye detecting the little paper-covered volume on Lucy's table. And, stepping forward, he took it up.

Dora unexpectedly found her voice a little husky as she replied, and had to clear her throat.

'It is a book I brought for Lucy. Sandy is a baptized Christian, David. Lucy wants to teach him, so I brought her this little Catechism, which Father Russell recommends.'

David turned the book over in silence. He read a passage concerning the Virgin Mary; another, in which the child asked about the number and names of the Archangels, gave a detailed answer; another in which

[161]

Dissenters were handled with an acrimony which contrasted with a general tone of sweetness and unction.

David laid it down on the mantelpiece.

'No, Dora, I can't have Sandy taught out of this.'

He spoke with dignity, but with an endeavour to make his tone as gentle as possible.

Dora was silent a moment; then she broke out:

'What will you teach him, then? Is he to be a Christian at all?'

'In a sense, yes; with all my heart, yes! so far, at least, as his father has any share in the matter.'

‘And is his mother to have no voice?’ Dora went on with growing bitterness and hurry. ‘And as for me — why did you let me be his godmother? I take it seriously, and I may do nothing.’

‘You may do everything,’ he said, sitting down beside her, ‘except teach him extreme matter of this kind, which, because I am what I am, will make a critic of the child before his time. I am not a bigot, Dora! I shall not interfere with Lucy; she would not teach him in this way. She talks to him; and she instinctively feels for me, and what she says comes softly and vaguely to him. It is different with things like this, set down in black and white, and to be learnt by heart. You must remember that half of it seems to me false history, and some of it false morals.’

He looked at her anxiously. The jarring note was hateful to him. He had always taken for granted that Lucy was under Dora’s influence religiously — had

[162]

perhaps made it an excuse for a gradual withdrawal of his inmost mind from his wife, which in reality rested on quite other reasons. But his heart was full of dreams about his son. He could not let Dora have her way there.

‘Oh, how different it is,’ cried Dora, in a low, intense voice, twining her hands together, ‘from what I once thought!’

‘No!’ he said, vehemently, ‘there is no real difference between you and me — there never can be; teach Sandy to be good and to love you! That’s what I should like!’

His eyes were full of emotion, but he smiled. Dora, however, could not respond. The inner tension was too strong. She turned away, and began fidgeting with Lucy’s workbag.

Then a small voice and a preparatory turmoil were heard outside.

‘Auntie Dora! Auntie Dora!’ cried Sandy, rushing in with a hop, skip, and a jump, and flourishing a picture-book, ‘look at zese pickers! Dat’s a buffalo — most *estrornary* animal, the buffalo!’

‘Come here, rascal!’ called his father, and the child ran up to him. David knelt to look at the picture, but the little fellow suddenly dropped it and his interest in it, in a way habitual to him, twined one arm round his father’s neck, laid his cheek against David’s, crossed one foot over the other, and, thumb in mouth, looked Dora up and down with his large, observant eyes.

[163]

Dora, melted, wooed him to come to her. Her adoration of him was almost on a level with David’s. Sandy took a minute to think whether he should leave his father. Then he climbed her knee, and patronised her on the subject of buffaloes and giraffes — ‘I tan’t ‘splain everything to you, Auntie Dora, you’ll know when you’re older ‘— till Lucy and supper came together. And supper was brightened both by Lucy’s secret content in the prospect of the Benet’s Park visit and by the child’s humours. When Dora said good night to her host, their manner to each other had its usual fraternal quality. Nevertheless, the woman carried away with her both resentment and distress.

About a fortnight later David and Lucy started one fine October afternoon for Benet’s Park. The cab was crowded with Lucy’s luggage, and David, in new clothes to please his wife, felt himself, as the cab door closed upon them, a trapped and miserable man.

What had possessed Lord Driffield to send that unlucky note? For Lord Driffield himself David had a grateful and real affection. Ever since that whimsical scholar had first taken kindly notice of the boy-trades- man, there had been a growing friendship between the two; and of late years Lord Driffield’s interest in David’s development and career had become particularly warm and cordial. He had himself largely contributed to the subtler sides of that development, had helped to refine the ambitions and raise the standards of the

[164]

growing intellect; his advice, owing to his lifelong commerce with and large possession of books, had often been of great practical use to the young man; his library had for years been at David's service, both for reference and borrowing; and he had supplied his favourite with customers and introductions in a large percentage of the University towns both at home and abroad, a social milieu where Lord Driffield was more at home and better appreciated than in any other. The small delicately featured man, whose distinguished face, with its abundant waves of silky hair — once ruddy, now a goldenish white — presided so oddly over an incorrigible shabbiness of dress, had become a familiar figure in David's life. Their friendship, of course, was limited to a very definite region of thought and relation; but they corresponded freely, when the}^ were apart, on matters of literature, bibliography, sometimes of politics; and no sooner was the Earl at Benet's Park than David had constant calls from him in his office at the back of the now spacious and important establishment in Prince's Street,

But Lord Driffield, as we know, had managed his mind better than his marriage, and his savoir vivre was no match for his learning. He bore his spouse and his country-gentleman life patiently enough in general; but every now and then he fell into exasperation. His wife flooded him too persistently, perhaps, with cousins and grandees of the duller sort, whose ideas seemed to him as raw as their rent-rolls were large — till he rebelled.

[165]

Then he would have *his* friends; selecting them more or less at random from up and down the ranks of literature and science, till Lady Driffield raised her eye-brows, invited a certain number of her own set to keep her in countenance, and made up her mind to endure. At the end of the ordeal Lord Driffield generally made the rueful reflection that it had not gone off well. But he felt the better and digested the better for the self-assertion of it, and it was periodically renewed.

David and Lucy Grieve had been asked in some such moment of domestic annoyance. The Earl had seen 'Grieve's wife' twice, and hastily remembered that she

seemed 'a presentable little person.' He was constitutionally indifferent to and contemptuous of women. But he imagined that it would please David to bring his wife; and he was perhaps tolerably certain, since no one, be he rake or savant, possesses an historical name and domain without knowing it, that it would please the bookseller's wife to be invited.

David suspected a good deal of this, for he knew his man pretty well. As he sat opposite to Lucy in the railway carriage — first-class, since she felt it incongruous to go in anything else — he recalled certain luncheons at Benet's Park, when he had been doing a bit of work in the library during the family sojourn. Certainly Lucy did not realise at all how formidable these aristocratic women could be!

And his pride — at bottom the workman's pride — was made uncomfortable by his wife's *newness*. New

[166]

hat, new dress, new gloves! Himself too! It annoyed him that Lady Driffield should be so plainly informed that great pains had been taken for her. He felt irritable and out of gear. Being neither self-conscious nor awkward, he became both for the moment, out of sympathy with Lucy.

Yet Lucy was supremely happy as they sped along to Stalybridge. Suppose her father heard of it! She could no doubt insure his knowing; but it might set his back up still more, make him more mad than before with her and David. Eight years and more since he had spoken to her, and the other day, when he had seen her coming in Deansgate, he had crossed to the other side of the street! — Were those sleeves of her evening dress quite right? They were not caught down, she thought, quite in the right place. No doubt there would be time before dinner to put in a stitch. And she did hope that pleat from the neck would look all right. It was peculiar, but Miss Helby had assured her it was much worn. Would there be many titled people, she wondered, and would all the ladies wear diamonds? She thought disconsolately of the little black enamelled locket and the Roman pearls, which were all the adornments she possessed.

After a short journey they alighted at their station as the dusk was beginning.

‘Are you for Benet’s Park, m’m?’ said the porter to Lucy. ‘All right! — the carriage is just outside.’

Lucy held herself an inch taller, and waited for

[167]

David to come back from the van with their two new portmanteaus.

Meanwhile she noticed two other groups of people, whose bags and rugs were being appropriated by a couple of powdered footmen — a husband and wife, and a tall military-looking man accompanied by two ladies. The two ladies belonged to the height of fashion — of that Lucy was certain, as she stole an intimidated glance at the cut of their tailor-made gowns and the costliness of the fur cloak which one of them carried. As for the other lady, could she also be on her way to Benet’s Park — with this uncouth figure, this mannish height and breadth, this complete lack of waist, these large arms and hands, and the over-ample garments and hat, of green cashmere slashed with yellow, in which she was marvellously arrayed? Yet she seemed entirely at her ease, which was more than Lucy was, and her little dark husband was already talking with the tall ladies.

David, having captured the luggage, was accosted by one of the footmen, who then came up to Lucy and took her bag. She and David followed in his wake, and found themselves mingling with the other five persons, who were clearly to be their fellow-guests.

As they stood outside the station door, the elder of the two ladies turned and ran a scrutinising eye over Lucy and the person in sage green following her; then she said rapidly to the gentleman with her :

[168]

‘Now, remember Mathilde can’t go outside, and I prefer to have her with me.’

‘Well, I suppose there’ll be room in the omnibus, said he, shortly. ‘I shall go in the dog-cart and get a smoke. By George! those are good horses of Driffield’s! And they are not the pair I sent him over from Ireland in the autumn either.’

He went down the steps, patted and examined the horses, and threw a word or two to the coachman. Lucy, palpitating with excitement and alarm, felt a corresponding awe of the person who could venture such familiarities even with the servants and live-stock of Benet’s Park.

The servant let down the steps of the smart omnibus with its impatient steeds. The two tall ladies got in.

‘Mathilde!’ called the elder.

A little maid, dressed in black, and carrying a large dressing-bag, hurried down the steps before the remaining guests, and was helped in by the footman. The lady in sage green smiled at her husband — a sleepy, humorous smile. Then she stepped in, the footman touching his hat to her as though he knew her.

‘Any maid, m’m?’ said the man to Lucy, as she was following.

‘No — oh *no!*’ said Lucy, stumbling in. ‘Give me my bag, please.’

The man gave it to her, and timidly looking round her she settled herself in the smallest space and the remotest corner she could.

[169]

When the carriage rolled off, the lady in green looked out of window for a while at the dark flying fields and woods, over which the stars were beginning to come out.

‘Are you a stranger in these parts, or do you know Benet’s Park already?’ she said presently to Lucy, who was next her, in a pleasant, nonchalant way.

‘I have never been here before,’ said Lucy, dreading somehow the sound of her own voice; ‘but my husband is well acquainted with the family.’

She was pleased with her own phrase, and began to recover herself. The lady said no more, however, but leant back and apparently went to sleep. The tall ladies

presently did the same. Lucy's depression returned as the silence lasted. She supposed that it was aristocratic not to talk to people till you had been introduced to them. She hoped she would be introduced when they reached Benet's Park. Otherwise it would be awkward, staying in the same house.

Then she fell into a dream, imagining herself with a maid — ordering her about deliciously — saying to the handsome footman 'my maid has my wraps'— and then with the next jolt of the carriage waking up to the humdrum and unwelcome reality. And David might be as rich as anybody! Familiar resentments and cravings stirred in her, and her drive became even less of a pleasure than before. As for David, he spent the whole of it in lively conversation with the small dark man, beside the window.

[170]

The carriage paused a moment. Then great gates were swung back and in they sped, the horses stepping out smartly now that they were within scent of home. There was a darkness as of thick and lofty trees, then dim opening stretches of park; lastly a huge house, mirage-like in the distance, with rows of lighted windows, a crackling of crisp gravel, the sound of the drag, and a pomp of opening doors.

'Shall I take your bag, Madam?' said a magnificent person, bending towards Lucy, as, clinging to her possession, she followed the lady in green into the outer hall.

'Oh no, thank you! at least, shall I find it again?' said the frightened Lucy, looking in front of her at the vast hall, with its tall lamps and statues and innumerable doors.

'It shall be sent upstairs for you, Madam,' said the magnificent person gravely, and, as Lucy thought, severely.

She submitted, and looked round for David. Oh, where was he?

'This is a fine hall, isn't it?' said the lady in green beside her. 'Bad period — but good of its kind. What on earth do they spoil it for with those shocking modern portraits?'

Such assurance — combined with such garments — in such a house — it was nothing short of a miracle!

[171]

CHAPTER III

‘Now, Lavinia, do be kind to young Mrs. Grieve. She is evidently as shy as she can be.’

So spoke Lord Driffield, with some annoyance in his voice, as he looked into his wife’s room after dressing for dinner.

‘I suppose she can amuse herself like other people,’ said Lady Driffield. She was standing by the fire warming a satin-shoed foot. ‘I have told Williams to leave all the houses open to-morrow. And there’s church, and the pictures. The Danbys and the rest of us are going over to Lady Herbart’s for tea.’

A cloud came over Lord Driffield’s face. He made some impatient exclamation, which was muffled by his white beard and moustache, and walked back to his own room.

Meanwhile Lucy, in another corridor of the great house, was standing before a long glass, looking herself up and down in a tumult of excitement and anxiety.

She had just passed through a formidable hour! In a great gallery, with polished floor, and hung with portraits of ancestral Driffields, the party from the station had found Lady Driffield, with five or six other people,

[172]

who seemed to be already staying in the house. Though the butler had preceded them, no names but those of Lady Venetia Danby and Miss Danby had been announced; and when Lady Driffield, a tall effective-looking woman, with a cold eye and an expressionless voice, said a short ‘How do you do?’ and extended a few fingers to David and his wife, no names were mentioned, and Lucy felt a sudden depressing conviction that no names were needed. To the mistress of the house they were just two

non-entities, to whom she was to give bed and board for two nights to gratify her husband's whims; whether their insignificant name happened to be Grieve, or Tompkins, or Johnson, mattered nothing.

So Lucy had sat down in a subdued state of mind, and was handed tea by a servant, while the Danbys — Colonel Danby, after his smoke in the dog-cart, following close on the heels of his wife and daughter — mixed with the group round the tea-table, and much chatter, combined with a free use of Christian names, liberal petting of Lady Driffield's Pomeranian, and an account by Miss Danby of an accident to herself in the hunting-field, filled up a half-hour which to one person, at least, had the qualities of a nightmare. David was talking to the lady in green — to whom, by the way, Lady Driffield had been distinctly civil. Once he came over to relieve Lucy from a waterproof which was on her knee, and to get her some bread and butter. But otherwise no one took any notice of her, and she

173]

fell into a nervous terror lest she should upset her cup, or drop her teaspoon, or scatter her crumbs on the floor.

Then at last Lord Driffield, who had been absent on some country business, which his soul loathed, had come in, and with the cordiality, nay, affection of his greeting to David, and the kindness of his notice of herself, little Lucy's spirits had risen at a bound. She felt instinctively that a protector had arrived, and even the formidable procession upstairs in the wake of Lady Driffield, when the moment at last arrived for showing the guests to their rooms, had passed off safely, Lucy throwing out an agitated 'Thank you !' when Lady Driffield had even gone so far as to open a door with her own bediamonded hand, which had Mrs. Grieve's plebeian appellations written in full upon the card attached to it.

And now! Was the dress nice? Would it do? Unluckily, since Lucy's rise in the social scale which had marked the last few years, the sureness of her original taste in dress had somewhat deserted her. Her natural instinct was for trimness and closeness;

but of late her ideals had been somewhat confused by a new and more important dressmaker with 'aesthetic' notions, who had been recommended to her by the good-natured and artistic wife of one of the College professors. Under the guidance of this expert, she had chosen a 'Watteau *sacque*' from a fashion-plate, not quite daring, little tradesman's daughter as she felt

[174]

herself at bottom, to venture on the undisguised low neck and short sleeves of ordinary fashionable dress.

She said fretfully to herself that she could see nothing in this vast room. More and more candles did she light with a trembling hand, trusting devoutly that no one would come in and discover her with such an extravagant illumination. Then she tried each of the two long glasses of the room in turn. Her courage mounted. It *was* pretty. The terra-cotta shade was *exquisite*, and *no* one could tell that the satin was cotton-backed. The flowing sleeves and the pleat from the shoulder gave her dignity, she was certain; and she had done her hair beautifully. She wished David would come in and see! But his room was across a little landing, which, indeed, seemed to be all their own, for it was shut off from the passage they had entered from by an outer door. There was, however, more than one door opening on to the landing, and Lucy was so much afraid of her surroundings that she preferred to wait till he came.

Meanwhile — what a bedroom! Why, it was more gorgeous than any drawing-room she had ever entered. Every article of furniture was of old marqueterie, adapted to modern uses, the appointments of the writing-table were of solid silver — Lucy had eagerly ascertained the fact by looking at the 'marks' — and as for the towels, she simply could not have imagined that such things were made! Her little soul was in a whirl of envy, admiration, pride. What tales she would have to tell Dora when they got home!

[175]

‘Are you ready?’ said David, opening the door. ‘I believe I hear people going downstairs.’

He came in arrayed in the new dress suit which became him as well as anything else; for he had a natural dignity which absorbed and surmounted any novelty of circumstance or setting, and was purely a matter of character, depending upon a mind familiar with large interests and launched towards ideal aims. He might be silent, melancholy, impracticable, but never meanly self-conscious. It had rarely occurred to anyone to pity or condescend to David Grieve.

Lucy looked at him with uneasy pride. Then she glanced back at her own reflection in the glass.

‘What do you think of it?’ she asked him, eagerly.

‘Magnificent!’ said David, with all the sincerity of ignorance — wishing, moreover, to make his wife pleased with herself. ‘But oughtn’t you to have gloves instead of those things?’

He pointed doubtfully to the mittens on her arms.

‘Oh, David, don’t say that!’ cried Lucy, in despair. ‘Miss Helby said these were the right things. It’s to be like an old picture, don’t you understand? and I haven’t got any gloves but those I came in. Oh, don’t be so disagreeable!’

She looked ready to cry. Poor David hastened to declare that Miss Helby must be right, and that it was all very nice. Then they blew out the candles and ventured forth.

‘Lord Driffield says that Canon Aylwin is coming,’

[176]

said David, examining some Hollar engravings on the wall of the staircase as they descended, ‘and the Dean of Bradford, who is staying with him. I shall be glad to see Canon Aylwin.’

His face took a pleased meditative look. He was thinking of Canon Alywin's last volume of essays — of their fine scholarship, their delicate, unique qualities of style. As for Lucy, it seemed to her that all the principalities and powers of this world were somehow arraying themselves against her in that terrible drawing-room they were so soon to enter. She set her teeth, held up her head, and on they went.

Presently they found themselves approaching a glass door, which opened into the central hall. Beyond it was a crowd of figures and a buzz of talk, and at the door stood a tall person in black with white gloves, holding a silver tray, from which he presented David with a button-hole. Then, with a manner at once suave and impersonal, he held open the door, and the husband and wife passed through.

'Ah, my dear Grieve,' said Lord Driffield, laying his hand on David's shoulder, 'come here and be introduced to Canon Aylwin. I am delighted to have caught him for you.'

So David was swept away to the other side of the room, and Lucy was left forlorn and stranded. It seemed to her an immense party; there were at least eight or ten fresh faces beyond those she had seen already. And just as she was looking for a seat into

[177]

which she might slip and hide herself, Lady Venetia Danby, who was standing near, playing with a huge feather fan and talking to a handsome young man, turned round by chance and, seeing the figure in the bright-coloured 'Watteau *sacque*,' involuntarily put up her eyeglass to look at it. Instantly Lucy, conscious of the eyeglass, and looking hurriedly round on the people near, was certain that the pleat from the shoulder and the mittens were irretrievably wrong and conspicuous, and that she had betrayed herself at once by her dress as an ignoramus and an outsider. Worst of all, the lady in green was in a *sacque* too! — a shapeless yellow thing of the most untutored and detestable make.

Mittens also! drawn laboriously over the hands and arms of an Amazon. Lucy glanced at Miss Danby beside her, then at a beautiful woman in pale pink across the room — at

their slim waists, the careless *aplomb* and grace with which the costly stuffs and gleaming jewels were worn, and the white necks displayed — and sank into a chair trembling and miserable. That the only person to keep her in countenance should be that particular person — that they two should thus fall into a class together, by themselves, cut off from all the rest — it was too much! Then, by a quick reaction, some of her natural obstinacy returned upon her. She held herself erect, and looked steadily round the room.

‘Mr. Edwardes — Mrs. Grieve,’ said Lady Driffield’s impassive voice, speaking, as it seemed to Lucy, from a

[178]

great height, as the tall figure swept past her to introductions more important.

A young man bowed to Lucy, looked at her for a moment, then, pulling his fair moustache, turned away to speak to Miss Danby, who, in the absence of more stimulating suitors for her smiles, was graciously pleased to bestow a few of them on Lord Driffield’s new agent.

‘Whom are we waiting for?’ said Miss Danby, looking round her, and slightly glancing at Lucy.

‘Only the Dean, I believe,’ said Mr. Edwardes, with a smile. ‘I never knew Dean Manley less than half an hour late in this house.’

A cold shiver ran through Lucy. Then they — she and David — had been all but the last, had all but kept the whole of this portentous gathering waiting for them.

In the midst of her new tremor the glass doors were again thrown open, and in walked the Dean — a short, plain man, with a mirthful eye, a substantial person, and legs which became his knee-breeches.

‘Thirty-five minutes, Dean!’ said the handsome youth who had been talking to Lady Venetia, as he held up his watch.

‘It is a remarkable fact, Reggie,’ said the Dean, laying his hand on the lad’s shoulder, ‘that your watch has gained persistently ever since I was first acquainted with you. Ah, well, keep it ahead, my boy. A diplomatist must be egged on somehow.’

‘I thought the one condition of success in that

[179]

trade was the patience to do nothing,’ said a charming voice. ‘Don’t interfere with Reggie’s prospects, Dean.’

‘Has he got any?’ said the Dean, maliciously. ‘My dear Mrs. Wellesdon, you are a "sight for sair een."’

And he pressed the new-comer’s hand between both his own, surveying her the while with a fatherly affection and admiration.

Lucy looked up, a curious envy at her heart. She saw the beautiful lady in pink, who had come across the room to greet the Dean. Was she beautiful? Lucy hurriedly asked herself. Perhaps not, in point of feature, but she held her head so nobly, her colour was so subtle and lovely, her eye so speaking, and her mouth so sweet, she carried about with her a preeminence so natural and human, that beauty was in truth the only word that fitted her. Now, as the Dean passed on from her to some one else, she glanced down at the little figure in terra-cotta satin, and, with a kindly diffident expression, she sat down and began to talk to Lucy. Marcia Wellesdon was a sorceress, and could win whatever hearts she pleased. In a few moments she so soothed Lucy’s nervousness that she even beguiled from her some bright and natural talk about the journey and the house, and Lucy was rapidly beginning to be happy, when the signal for dinner was given, and a general move began.

At dinner Mr. Edwardes bestowed his conversation

[180]

for a decent space of time — say, during the soup and fish — upon Mrs. Grieve. Lucy, once more ill at ease, tried eagerly to propitiate him by asking innumerable questions about the family, and the pictures, and the estate, it being at once evident that he had an intimate knowledge of all three. But as the family, the pictures, and the estate were always with him, so to speak, made, indeed, a burden which his shoulders had some difficulty in carrying, the attractions of this vein of talk palled on the young agent — who was himself a scion of good family, with his own social ambitions — before long. He decided that Mrs. Grieve was pure middle-class, not at all accustomed to dine in halls of pride, and much agitated by her surroundings. The type did not interest him. She seemed to be asking him to help her out of the mire, and as one does not go into society to be benevolent but to be amused, by the time the first *entrée* was well in he had edged his chair round, and was in animated talk with pretty little Lady Alice Findlay, the daughter of the hook-nosed Lord-Lieutenant of the county, who was seated at Lady Driffield's right hand. Lucy noticed the immediate difference in tone, the easy variety of topic, compared with her own sense of difficulty, and her heart swelled with bitterness.

Then, to her horror, she saw that, from inattention and ignorance of what might be expected, she had allowed the servants to fill every single wineglass of the four standing at her right — positively every one.

[181]

Sherry, claret, hock, champagne — she was provided with them all. She cast a hurried and guilty eye round the table. Save for champagne, each lady's glasses stood immaculately empty, and when Lucy came back to her own collection she could bear it no longer.

'Mr. Edwardes!' she said hastily, leaning over towards him.

The young man turned abruptly. 'Yes,' he said, looking at her in some surprise.

‘Oh, Mr. Edwardes! can you ask some one to take these wineglasses away? I didn’t want any, and it looks so — so — dreadful!’

The agent thought that Mrs. Grieve was going to cry. As for himself, his eye twinkled, and he had great difficulty to restrain a burst of laughter. He called a footman near, and Lucy was soon relieved of her fourfold incubus.

‘Oh, but you must save the champagne!’ he said, and, bending his chair backward, he was about to recall the man, when Lucy stopped him.

‘Don’t — don’t, *please*, Mr. Edwardes!’ she said, in an agony.

He lifted his eyebrows good-humouredly, and desisted. Then he asked her if he should give her some water, and when that was done the episode apparently seemed to him closed, for he turned away again, and looked out for fresh opportunities with Lady Alice. Lucy, meanwhile, was left feeling herself even more unsuccessful and more out of place than before, and ready to sink

[182]

with vexation. And how well David was getting on! There he was, between Mrs. Shepton and the beautiful lady in pink, and he and Mrs. Wellesdon were deep in conversation, his dark head bent gravely towards her, his face melting every now and then into laughter or crossed by some vivid light of assent and pleasure. Lucy’s look travelled over the table, the orchids with which it was covered, the lights, the plate, then to the Vandykes behind the guests, and the great mirrors in between — came back to the table, and passed from face to face, till again it rested upon David. The conviction of her husband’s handsome looks and natural adequacy to this or any world, with which her survey ended, brought with it a strange mixture of feelings — half pleasure, half bitterness.

‘Are you from this part of the world, may I ask?’ said a voice at her elbow.

She turned, and saw Colonel Danby, who was tired of devoting himself to the wife of a neighbouring Master of Hounds — a lady with white hair and white eyelashes,

always apparently on the point of sleep, even at the liveliest dinner-table — and was now inclined to see what this little provincial might be made of.

‘Oh, yes! we are from Manchester,’ said Lucy, straightening herself, and preparing to do her best. ‘We live in Manchester — at least, of course, not in Manchester. No one could do that.’

It was but three years since she had ceased to do it, but new habits of speech grow apace when it is a

[183]

matter of social prestige. She was terribly afraid lest anybody should now think of them as persons who lived over their shop.

‘Ah! — suppose not,’ said Colonel Danby, carelessly. ‘Land in Manchester, they tell me now, is almost as costly as it is in London.’

Whereat Lucy went off at score, delighted to make Manchester important and to produce her own information. She had an aptitude for business gossip, and she chatted eagerly about the price that So-and-So had paid for their new warehouses, and the sum which report said the Corporation was going to spend on a fine new street.

‘And of course many people don’t like it. There’s always grumbling about the rates. But they should have public spirit, shouldn’t they? Are you acquainted with Manchester?’ she added, more timidly.

All this time Colonel Danby had been listening with half an ear, and was much more assiduously trying to make up his mind whether the little *bourgeoise* was pretty at all. She had rather a fine pair of eyes — he supposed she had made that dress in her own back parlour.

‘Manchester? I — oh, I have spent a night at the Queen’s Hotel now and then,’ said the Colonel, with a yawn. ‘What do you do there? Do you amuse yourself — eh?’

His smile was not pleasant. He had a florid face, with bad lines round the eyes and a tyrannous mouth.

[184]

His physical make had been magnificent, but reckless living had brought on the penalties of gout before their time.

Lucy was intimidated by the mixture of familiarity and patronage in the tone.

‘Oh, yes,’ she said, hurriedly; ‘we get all the best companies from the London theatres, and there are very good concerts.’

‘And that kind of thing amuses you?’ said the Colonel, still examining her with the same cool, fixed glance.

‘I like music very much,’ stammered Lucy, and then fell silent.

‘Do you know all these people here?’

‘Oh, dear, no!’ she cried, feeling the very question malevolent. ‘I don’t know any of them. My husband wishes to lead a very retired life,’ she added, bristling a little, by way of undoing the effect of her admissions.

‘And you don’t wish it?’

The disagreeable eyes smiled again.

‘Oh! I don’t know,’ said Lucy.

Colonel Danby reflected that whatever his companion might be, she was not amusing.

‘Have you noticed the gentleman opposite?’ he inquired, stifling another yawn.

Lucy timidly looked across.

‘It is — it is the Dean of Bradford, isn’t it?’

‘Yes; it’s a comfort, isn’t it, when one can know a

[185]

man by his clothes? Do you see what his deanship has had for dinner?’

Lucy ventured another look, and saw that the Dean had in front of him a plate of biscuits and a glass of water, and that the condition of his knives and forks showed him to have hitherto subsisted on this fare alone.

‘Is he so very — so very religious?’ she said, wondering.

‘A saint in gaiters? Well, I don’t know. Probably the saint has dined at one. Do you feel any inclination to be a saint, Mrs. Grieve?’

Lucy could neither meet nor parry the banter of his look. She only blushed.

‘I wouldn’t attempt it, if I were you,’ he said, laughing. ‘Those pretty brown eyes weren’t meant for it.’

Lucy suddenly felt as though she had been struck, so free and cavalier was the tone. Her cheek took a deeper crimson, and she looked helplessly across at David.

‘Little fool!’ thought the Colonel. ‘But she has certainly some points.’

At that moment Lady Driffield gave the signal, and, with a half-ironical bow to his companion, Colonel Danby rose, picked up her handkerchief for her, and drew his chair aside to let her pass.

Presently Lucy was sitting in a corner of the magnificent green drawing-room, to which Lady Driffield had carelessly led the way. In her vague humiliation and unhappiness, she craved that some one should come

[186]

and talk to her and be kind to her — even Mrs. Shepton, who had addressed a few pleasant remarks to her on their way from the dining-room. But Mrs. Shepton was absorbed by Lady Driffield, who sat down beside her, and took some trouble to talk. ‘Then why not to me?’ was Lucy’s instinctive thought. For she realised that she and Mrs. Shepton were socially not far apart. Yet Lady Driffield had so far addressed about six words to Mrs. David Grieve, while she was now bending her aristocratic neck to listen to Mrs. Shepton, who was talking entirely at her ease, with her arm round the back of a neighbouring chair, and, as it seemed to Lucy, about politics.

The rest of the ladies, with the exception of the Master of Hounds' wife, who sat in a chair by the fire and dozed, were all either old friends or relations, and they gathered in a group on the Aubusson rug in front of the fire, chatting merrily about their common kindred, the visits they had paid, or were to pay, the fate of their fathers and brothers in the recent election, 'the Duke's 'terrible embarrassments, or 'Sir Alfred's 'yachting party to Norway, of which little Lady Alice gave a sparkling account.

In her chair on the outskirts of the talkers, Lucy sat painfully turning over the leaves of a costly collection of autographs, which lay on the table near her. Sometimes she tried to interest herself in the splendid room, with its hangings of pale flowered silk, its glass cases, full of historical relics, miniatures, and precious

[187]

things, representing the long and brilliant past of the house of Driffield, the Sir Joshuas and Romneys, which repeated on the walls the grace and physical perfection of some of the living women below. But she had too few associations with anything she saw to care for it, and, indeed, her mind was too wholly given to her own vague, but overmastering sense of isolation and defeat. If it were only bedtime!

Mrs. Wellesdon glanced at the solitary figure from time to time, but Lady Alice had her arm round 'Marcia's' waist, and kept close hold of her favourite cousin. At last, however, Mrs. Wellesdon drew the young girl with her to the side of Lucy's chair, and, sitting down by the stranger, they both tried to entertain her, and to show her some of the things in the room.

Lucy brightened up at once, and thought them both the most beautiful and fascinating of human beings. But her good fortune was soon over, alas! for the gentlemen came in, and the social elements were once more redistributed. 'Reggie,' the young diplomatist, freshly returned from Berlin, laid hold of his sister Marcia, and his cousin Lady Alice, and carried them off for a family gossip into a corner of the room, whence peals of young laughter were soon to be heard from him and Lady Alice.

Mr. Edwardes and Colonel Danby passed Mrs. Grieve by, in quest of metal more attractive; Lord Driffield, the Dean, Canon Aylwin, and David stood absorbed in conversation; while Lady Driffield transferred her

[188]

attentions to Mr. Shepton, and the husband of the lady by the fire walked up to her, insisting, some- what crossly, on waking her. Lucy was once more left alone.

‘Lavinia, haven’t we done our duty to this apartment?’ cried Lord Driffield, impatiently; ‘it always puts me on stilts. The library is ten times more comfortable. I propose an adjournment.’

Lady Driffield shrugged her shoulders, and assented. So the whole party, Lucy timidly attaching herself to Mrs. Shepton, moved slowly through a long suite of beautiful rooms, till they reached the great cedar-fitted library, which was Lord Driffield’s paradise. Here was every book to be desired of the scholar to make him wise, and every chair to make him comfortable. Lord Driffield went to one of the bookcases, and took a vellum-bound book, found a passage in it, and showed it to David Grieve. Canon Aylwin and the Dean pressed in to look, and they all fell back into the recess of a great oriel, talking earnestly.

The others passed on into a conservatory beyond the library, where was a billiard-table, and many nooks for conversation amid the cunning labyrinths of flowers.

Lucy sank into a cane chair, close to a towering mass of arum lilies, and looked back into the library. Nobody in the conservatory had any thought for her. They were absorbed in each other, and a merry game of pyramids had been already organised. So Lucy watched her husband wistfully.

[189]

What a beautiful face was that of Canon Aylwin, with whom he was talking! She could not take her eyes from its long, thin outlines, the apostolic white hair, the

eager eyes and quivering mouth, contrasting with the patient courtesy of manner. Yet in her present soreness and heat, the saintly charm of the old man's figure did somehow but depress her the more.

A little after ten it became evident that nothing could keep the lady with the white eyelashes out of bed any longer, so the billiard-room party broke up, and, with a few gentlemen in attendance, the ladies streamed into the hall, and possessed themselves of bedroom candlesticks. The great house seemed to be alive with talk and laughter as they strolled upstairs, the girls making dressing-gown appointments in each other's rooms for a quarter of an hour later.

When Lucy reached her own door she stopped awkwardly. Lady Driffield walked on, talking to Marcia Wellesdon. But Marcia looked back:

'Good night, Mrs. Grieve.'

She returned, and pressed Lucy's hand kindly. 'I am afraid you must be tired,' she said; 'you look so.'

Lady Driffield also shook hands, but, with constitutional *gaucherie*, she did not second Mrs. Wellesdon's remark; she stood by silent and stiff.

'Oh, no, thank you,' said Lucy, hurriedly, 'I am quite well.'

When she had disappeared, the other two walked on.

'What a stupid little thing!' said Lady Driffield.

[190]

'The husband may be interesting — Driffield says he is — but I defy anybody to get anything out of the wife.'

It occurred to Marcia that nobody had been very anxious to make the attempt. But she only said aloud:

'I'm sure she is very shy. What a pity she wears that kind of dress! She might be quite pretty in something else.'

Meanwhile Lucy, after shutting the outer door of their little suite behind her, was overtaken as she opened that leading to her own room by a sudden gust of wind coming from a back staircase emerging on to their private passage, which she had not

noticed before. The candle was blown out, and she entered the room in complete darkness. She groped for the matches, and found the little stand; but there were none there. She must have used the last in the making of her great illumination before dinner. After much hesitation, she at last summoned up courage to ring the bell, groping her way to it by the help of the light in the passage.

For a long time no one came. Lucy, standing near her own door, seemed to hear two sounds — the angry beating of her own heart, and a murmur of far-off talk and jollity, conveyed to her up the mysterious staircase, which apparently led to some of the servants' quarters.

Fully five minutes passed; then steps were heard approaching, and a housemaid appeared. Lucy timidly asked for fresh matches. The girl said 'Yes, ma'am,'

[191]

in an off-hand way, looked at Lucy with a somewhat hostile eye, and vanished.

The minutes passed, but no matches were forth-coming. The whirlpool of the lower regions, where the fun was growing uproarious, seemed to have engulfed the messenger. At last Lucy was fain to undress by the help of a glimmer of light from her door left ajar, and after many stumbles and fumbings at last crept, tired and wounded, into bed. This finale seemed to her of a piece with all the rest.

As she lay there in the dark, incident after incident of her luckless evening coming back upon her, her heart grew hungry for David. Nay, her craving for him mounted to jealousy and passion. After all, though he did get on so much better in grand houses than she did, though they were all kind to him and despised her, he was hers, her very own, and no one should take him from her. Beautiful Mrs. Wellesdon might talk to him and make friends with him, but he did not belong to any of them, but to /ter, Lucy. She pined for the sound of his step — thought of throwing herself into his arms, and seeking consolation there for the pains of an habitual self-importance crushed beyond bearing.

But when that step was actually heard outside, her mind veered in an instant. She had made him come; he would think she had disgraced him; he had probably noticed nothing, for a certain absent-mindedness in society had grown upon him of late years. No, she would hold her peace.

[192]

So when David, stepping softly and shading his candle, came in, and called 'Lucy' under his breath to see whether she might be awake, Lucy pretended to be sound asleep. He waited a minute, and then went out to change his coat and go down to the smoking-room.

Poor little Lucy! As she lay there in the dark, the tears dropping slowly on her embroidered pillow, the issue of all her mortification was a new and troubled consciousness about her husband. Why this difference between them? How was it that he commanded from all who knew him either a warm sympathy or an involuntary respect, while she

She had gathered from some scraps of the talk round him which had reached her that it was just those sides of his life — those quixotic ideal sides — which were an offence and annoyance to her that touched other people's imagination, opened their hearts. And she had worried and teased him all these years! Not since the beginning. For, looking back, she could well remember the days when it was still an intoxication that he should have married her, when she was at once in awe of him and foolishly, proudly, happy. But there had come a year when David's profits from his business had amounted to over 2,000*l*, and when, thanks to a large loan pressed upon him by his Unitarian landlord, Mr. Doyle, he had taken the new premises in Prince's Street. And from that moment Lucy's horizon had changed: her ambitions had hardened and narrowed; she had begun to be impatient with her husband, first, that he

[193]

could not make her rich faster, then, after their Tantalus gleam of wealth, that he would put mysterious and provoking obstacles in the way of their getting rich at all.

She meant to keep awake — to wait for him. But she began to think of Sandy. He would be glad to see his ‘mummy’ again! In fancy she pressed his cheek against her own burning one. He and David were still alive — still hers — it was all right somehow. Consolation began to steal upon her, and in ten minutes she was asleep.

[194]

CHAPTER IV

WHEN David came in later, he took advantage of Lucy’s sleep to sit up awhile in his own room. He was excited, and any strong impression, in the practical loneliness of his deepest life, always now produced the impulse to write.

‘*Midnight*. — Lucy is asleep. I hope she has been happy and they have been kind to her. I saw Mrs. Wellesdon talking to her after dinner. She must have liked that. But at dinner she seemed to be sitting silent a good deal.

‘What a strange spectacle is this country-house life to anyone bringing to it a fresh and unaccustomed eye! “After all,” said Mrs. Wellesdon, “you must admit that the best of anything is worth keeping. And in these country houses, with all their drawbacks, you do from time to time get the best of social intercourse, a phase of social life as gay, complex, and highly finished as it can possibly be made.”

‘Certainly this applies to me to-night. When have I enjoyed any social pleasure so much as my talk with her at dinner? When have I been conscious of such stimulus, such exhilaration, as the evening’s discussion produced in me? In the one case, Mrs. Wellesdon

[195]

taught me what general conversation might be — how nimble, delicate, and pleasure-giving; in the other, there was the joy of the intellectual wrestle, mingled with a glad

respect for one's opponents. Perhaps nowhere, except on some such ground and in some such circumstances as these, could a debate so earnest have taken quite so wholesome a tone, so wide a range. We were equals— debaters, not controversialists — friends, not rivals — in the quest for truth.

‘Yet what drawbacks! This army of servants — which might be an army of slaves without a single manly right, so mute, impassive, and highly trained it is — the breeding of a tyrannous temper in the men, of a certain contempt for facts and actuality even in the best of the women. Mrs. Wellesdon poured out her social aspirations to me. How naive and fanciful they were! They do her credit, but they will hardly do anyone else much good. And it is evident that they mark her out in her own circle, that they have brought her easily admiration and respect, so that she has never led to test them, as any one, with the same social interest, living closer to the average realities and griefs of life, must have been led to test them.

‘The culture, too, of these aristocratic women, when they are cultured, is so curious. Quite unconsciously and innocently it takes itself for much more than it is, merely by contrast with the *milieu* — the milieu of material luxury and complication — in which it moves.

‘But I am ungrateful. What a social power in the

[196]

best sense such a woman might become — a woman so sensitively endowed, so nobly planned!’

David dropped his pen awhile. In the silence of the great house, a silence broken only by the breathings of a rainy autumn wind through the trees outside, his thought took that picture-making intensity which was its peculiar gift. Images of what had been in his own life, and what might have been — the dream of passion which had so deeply marked and modified his manhood — Elise, seen in the clearer light of his richer experience — his married years — the place of the woman in the common life — on these his mind brooded, one by one, till gradually the solemn consciousness of

opportunities for ever missed, of failure, of limitation, evoked another, as solemn, but sweeter and more touching, of human lives irrevocably dependent on his, of the pathetic unalterable claim of marriage, the poverty and hopelessness of all self-seeking, the essential wealth, rich and making rich, of all self-spending. As he thought of his wife and son a deep tenderness flooded the man's whole nature. With a long sigh, it was as though he took them both in his arms, adjusting his strength patiently and gladly to the familiar weight.

Then, by a natural reaction, feeling, to escape itself, passed into speculative reminiscence and meditation of a wholly different kind.

‘Our discussion to-night arose from an attack — if

[197]

anyone so gentle can be said to attack — made upon me by Canon Aylwin, on the subject of those “Tracts on the New Testament” — tracts of mine, of which we have published three, while I have two or three more half done in my writing-table drawer. He said, with a certain nervous decision, that he did not wish to discuss the main question, but he would like to ask me, Could anyone be so sure of supposed critical and historical fact as to be clear that he was right in proclaiming it, when the proclamation of it meant the inevitable disturbance in his fellow-men of conceptions whereon their moral life depended? It was certain that he could destroy; it was most uncertain, even to himself, whether he could do anything else, with the best intentions; and, in ninety-nine cases out of a hundred, ought not the certainty of ‘doing a moral mischief to outweigh, with any just and kindly mind, the much feebler and less solid certainty he may imagine himself to have attained with regard to certain matters of history and criticism? ‘It was the old question of the rights of “heresy,” the function of the individual in the long history of thought. We fell into sides: Lord Driffield and I against the Dean and Canon Aylwin. The Dean did not, indeed, contribute much. He sat with his square powerful head bent forward, throwing in a shrewd comment here and there, mainly on the logical

course of the argument. But when we came to the main question, as we inevitably did, he withdrew altogether, though he listened.

[198]

“No,” he said, “no. I am not competent. It has not been my line in life. I have found more than enough to tax my strength in the practical administration of the goods of Christ. All such questions I leave, and must leave, to experts, such experts as” —and he mentioned the names of some of the leading scholars of the English Church — “or as my friend here,” and he laid his hand affectionately on Canon Aylwin’s knee.

‘Strange! He leaves to experts such questions as those of the independence, authenticity, and trustworthiness of the Gospel records; of the culture and idiosyncrasies of the first two centuries as tending to throw light on those records; of the earliest growth of dogma, as, thanks mainly to German labour, it may now be exhibited within the New Testament itself. In a Church of private judgment, he takes all this at second hand, after having vowed at his ordination “to be diligent in such studies as help to the knowledge of the Scriptures”!

‘Yet a better, a more God-fearing, a more sincere, and, within certain lines, a more acute man than Dean Manley it would certainly be difficult to find at the present time within the English Church. It is an illustration of the dualism in which so many minds tend to live, divided between two worlds, two standards, two wholly different modes of thought — the one applied to religion even in its intellectual aspect, the other applied to all the rest of existence. Yet — is truth divided?

[199]

‘To return to Canon Aylwin. I could only meet his reproach, which he had a special right to make, for he has taken the kindest interest in some of the earlier series of our “Workmen’s Tracts,” by going back to some extent to first principles. I

endeavoured to argue the matter on ground more or less common to us both. If both knowledge and morality have only become possible for man by the perpetual action of a Divine spirit on his since the dawn of conscious life; if this action has taken effect in human history, as, broadly speaking, the Canon would admit, through a free and constant struggle of opposites, whether in the realm of interest or the realm of opinion; and if this struggle, perpetually reconciled, perpetually renewed, is the divinely ordered condition, nay, if you will, the sacred task of human life, — how can the Christian, who clings, above all men, to the victory of the Divine in the human, who, moreover, in the course of his history has affronted and resisted all possible “authorities” but that of conscience — how can he lawfully resent the fullest and largest freedom of speech, employed disinterestedly and in good faith, on the part of his brother man? The truth must win; and it is only through the free life of the spirit that she has hitherto prevailed. So much, at least, the English Churchman must hold.

It comes to this: must there be no movement of thought because the individual who lives by custom and convention may at least temporarily suffer? Yet the risks of the individual throughout nature — so far

[200]

we were agreed — are the correlative of his freedom and responsibility.

‘ “Ah, well,” said the dear old man at last, with a change of expression which went to my heart, so wistful and spiritual it was, “perhaps I have been faithless; perhaps the Christian minister would do better to trust the Lord with His own. But before we leave the subject, let me say, once for all, that I have read all your tracts, and weighed most carefully all that they contain. The matter of them bears on what for me has been the study of many years, and all I can say is that I regard your methods of reasoning as unsound, and your conclusions as wholly false. I have been a literary man from my youth as well as a theologian, and I completely dissent from your literary judgments. I believe that if you had not been already possessed by a hostile philosophy — which will allow no space for miracle and revelation — you would not have arrived at them. I am

old and you are young. Let me bear my testimony while there is time. I have taken a great interest in you and your work.”

‘He spoke with the most exquisite courtesy and simplicity, his look was dignified and heavenly. I felt like kneeling to ask his blessing, even though he could only give it in the shape of a prayer for my enlightenment.

‘But now, alone with conscience, alone with God, how does the matter stand? The challenge of such a life and conviction as Canon Aylwin’s is a searching

[201]

one. It bids one look deep into one’s self, it calls one to truth and soberness. What I seem to see is that he and I both approach Christianity with a prepossession, with, as he says, “a philosophy.” His is a prepossession in favour of a system of interference from without, by Divine or maleficent powers, for their own ends, with the ordinary sequences of nature — which once covered, one may say, the whole field of human thought and shaped the whole horizon of humanity. From the beginning of history this prepossession — which may be regarded in all its phases as an expression of man’s natural impatience to form a working hypothesis of things — has struggled with the "impulse to know." And slowly, irrevocably, from age to age the impulse to know has beaten back the impulse to imagine, has confined the prepossession of faith within narrower and narrower limits, till at last it is even preparing to deny it the guidance of religion, which it has so long claimed. For the impulse of science, justified by the long wrestle of centuries, is becoming itself religious, — and there is a new awe rising on the brow of Knowledge.

‘*My* prepossession — but let the personal pronoun be merely understood as attaching me to that band of thinkers, “of all countries, nations, and languages,” whose pupil and creature I am — is simply that of science, of the organised knowledge of the race. It is drawn from the whole of experience, it governs without dispute every department of thought, and without it, in fact, neither Canon Aylwin nor I could think at all.

[202]

‘Moreover, I humbly believe that I desire the same spiritual goods as he: holiness, the knowledge of God, the hope of immortality. But while for him these things are bound up with the maintenance of the older prepossession, for me there is no such connection at all.

‘And again, I seem to see that when this intellect of his, so keen, so richly stored, approaches the special ground of Christian thought, it changes in quality. It becomes wholly subordinate to the affections, to the influences of education and habitual surroundings. Talk to him of Dante, of the influence of the barbarian invasions on the culture and development of Europe, of the Oxford movement, you will find in him an historical sense, a delicate accuracy of perception, a luminous variety of statement, which carry you with him into the very heart of the truth. But discuss with him the critical habits and capacity of those earliest Christian writers, on whose testimony so much of the Christian canon depends — ask him to separate the strata of material in the New Testament, according to their relative historical and ethical value, under the laws which he would himself apply to any other literature in the world — invite him to exclude this as legendary and that as accretion, to distinguish between the original kernel and that which the fancy or the theology of the earliest hearers inevitably added — and you will feel that a complete change has come over the mind. However subtle and precise his arguments may outwardly

[203]

look, they are at bottom the arguments of affection, of the special pleader. He has fenced off the first century from the rest of knowledge; has invented for all its products alike special criteria and a special perspective. He cannot handle the New Testament in the spirit of science, for he approaches it on his knees. The imaginative habit of a lifetime has decided for him; and you ask of him what is impossible.

‘“An end must come to scepticism somewhere!” he once said in the course of our talk. " Faith must take her leap — you know as well as I! — if there is to be faith at all.”

‘Yes, but *where* —at what point? Is the clergyman who talks with sincere distress about infidel views of Scripture and preaches against them, while at the same time he could not possibly give an intelligible account of the problem of the Synoptic Gospels as it now presents itself to the best knowledge, or an outline of the case pressed by science for more than half a century with increasing force and success against the historical character of St. John’s Gospel — is he justified in making his ignorance the leaping-point?

‘Yet the upshot of all our talk is that I am restless and oppressed.

‘... I sit and think of these nine years since Berkeley and sorrow first laid hold of me. Berkeley rooted in me the conception of mind as the independent

[204]

antecedent of all experience, and none of the scientific materialism, which so troubles Ancrum that he will ultimately take refuge from it in Catholicism, affects me. But the ethical inadequacy of Berkeley became very soon plain to me. I remember I was going one day through one of the worst slums of Ancoats, when a passage in his examination of the origin of evil occurred to me:

‘“But we should further consider that the very blemishes and defects of nature are not without their use, in that *they make an agreeable sort of variety*, and augment the beauty of the rest of the creation, as shades in a picture serve to set off the brighter and more enlightened parts.”

‘I had just done my best to save a little timid scare-crow of a child, aged about six, from the blows of its brutal father, who had already given it a black eye — my heart blazed within me, — and from that moment Berkeley had no spell for me.

‘Then came that moment when, after my marriage, haunted as I was by the perpetual oppression of Manchester’s pain and poverty, the Christian mythology, the

Christian theory with all its varied and beautiful flowering's in human life, had for a time an attraction for me so strong that Dora naturally hoped everything, and I felt myself becoming day by day more of an orthodox Christian. What checked the tendency I can hardly now remember in detail. It was a converging influence of books and life — no doubt largely

[205]

helped, with regard to the details of Christian belief, by the pressure of the German historical movement, as I became more and more fully acquainted with it.

‘At any rate, St. Damian’s gradually came to mean nothing to me, though I kept, and keep still, a close working friendship with most of the people there. But I am thankful for that Christian phase. It enabled me to realise as nothing else could the strength of the Christian case.

‘And since then it has been a long and weary journey through many paths of knowledge and philosophy, till of late years the new English phase of Kantian and Hegelian thought, which has been spreading in our universities, and which is the outlet of men who can neither hand themselves over to authority, like Newman, nor to a scientific materialism, like Clifford and Haeckel, nor to a mere patient nescience in the sphere of metaphysics, like Herbert Spencer, has come to me with an ever-increasing power of healing and edification.

‘That the spiritual principle in nature and man exists and governs; that mind cannot be explained out of anything but itself; that the human consciousness derives from a universal consciousness, and is thereby capable both of knowledge and of goodness; that the phenomena and history of conscience are the highest revelation of God; that we are called to cooperation in a divine work, and in spite of pain and sin may find

[206]

ground for an infinite trust, covering the riddle of the individual lot, in the history and character of that work in man, so far as it has gone — these things are deeper and deeper realities to me. They govern my life; they give me peace; they breathe to me hope.

‘But the last glow, the certainties, the *vision*, of faith! Ah! me, I believe that He is there, yet my heart gropes in darkness. All that is personality, holiness, compassion in us, must be in Him intensified beyond all thought. Yet I have no familiarity of prayer. I cannot use the religious language which should be mine without a sense of unreality. My heart is athirst.

‘And can religion possibly *depend* upon a long process of thought? How few can think their way to Him — perhaps none, indeed, by the logical intellect alone. He reveals himself to the simple. *Speak to me, to me also, my Father!*’

Sunday morning broke fresh and golden after a wet night. Lucy lay still in the early dawn, thinking of the day that had to be faced, feeling more cheerful, however, with the refreshment of sleep, and inclined to hope that she might have got over the worst, and that better things might be in store for her.

So that when David said to her, ‘You poor little person, did they eat you up last night — Lady Driffield and her set?’ she only answered evasively that Mrs. Wellesdon had been nice, but that Lady Driffield had

[207]

very bad manners, and she was sure everybody thought so.

To which David heartily assented. Then Lucy put her question:

‘Did you think, when you looked at me last night at dinner, that I — that I looked nice?’ she said, flushing, yet driven on by an inward smart.

‘Of course I did!’ David declared. ‘Perhaps you should hold yourself up a little more. The women here are so astonishingly straight and tall, like young poplars.’

‘Mrs. Wellesdon especially,’ Lucy reflected, with a pang.

‘But you thought I — had done my hair nicely?’ she said, desperately.

‘Very! And it was the prettiest hair there!’ he said, smoothing back the golden brown curls from her temple.

His compliment so delighted her that she dressed and prepared to descend to breakfast with a light heart. She was not often now so happily susceptible to a word of praise from him; she was more exacting than she had once been, but since her acquaintance with Lady Driffield she had been brought low!

And her evil fortune returned upon her, alas, at breakfast, and throughout the day. Breakfast, indeed, seemed to her a more formidable meal than any. For people straggled in, and the ultimate arrangement of the table seemed entirely to depend upon the personal

[208]

attractiveness of individuals, upon whether they annexed or repelled new-comers. Lucy found herself at one time alone and shivering in the close neighbourhood of Lady Driffield, who was entrenched behind the tea-urn, and after giving her guest a finger, had, Lucy believed, spoken once to her, expressing a desire for scones. The meal itself, with its elaborate cakes and meats and fruits, intimidated Lucy even more than the dinner had done. The breach between it and any small house-keeping was more complete. She felt that she was eating like a school-girl; she devoured her toast dry, out of sheer inability to ask for butter; and, sitting for the most part isolated in the unpopular — that is to say, the Lady Driffield — quarter of the table, went generally half-starved.

As for David, he, with Lord Driffield, Mrs. Wellesdon, Lady Alice, Reggie, and Mrs. Shepton for company at the other end, had on the whole an excellent time. There was, however, one uncomfortable moment of friction between him and Colonel Danby, who had strolled in last of all, with the vicious look of a man who has not had the good night to which he considered himself entitled, and must somehow wreak it on the world.

Just before he entered, Lady Drifffield, looking round to see that the servants had departed, had languidly started the question: ‘Does one talk to one’s maid? Do you, Marcia, talk to your maid? How can anyone ever find anything to say to one’s maid?’

[209]

The topic proved unexpectedly interesting. Both Marcia Wellesdon and Lady Alice declared that their maids were their bosom friends. Lady Drifffield shrugged her shoulders, then looked at Mrs. Grieve, who had sat silent, opened her mouth to speak, recollected herself, and said nothing. At that moment Colonel Danby entered.

‘I say, Danby!’ called the young attaché, Marcia’s brother, ‘do you talk to your valet?’

‘Talk to my valet!’ said the Colonel, putting up his eye-glass to look at the dishes on the side table — he spoke with suavity, but there was an ominous pucker in the brow — ‘what should I do that for? I don’t pay the fellow for his conversation, I presume, but to button my boots, and precious badly he does it too. I don’t even know what his elegant surname is. “Thomas,” or “James,” or “William” is enough peg for me to hang my orders on. I generally christen them fresh when they come to me.’

Little Lady Alice looked indignant. Lucy caught her husband’s face, and saw it suddenly pale, as it easily did under a quick emotion. He was thinking of the valet he had seen at the station standing by the Danbys’ luggage — a dark, anxious-looking man, whose likeness to one of the compositors in his own office — a young fellow for whom he had a particular friendship — had attracted his notice.

‘Why do you suppose he puts up with you — your

[210]

servant?’ he said, bending across to Colonel Danby. He smiled a little, but his eyes betrayed him,

‘Puts up with me!’ Colonel Danby lifted his brows, regarding David with an indescribable air of insolent surprise. ‘Because I make it worth his while in pounds, shillings, and pence; that’s all.’

And he put down his pheasant *salmi* with a clatter, while his wife handed him bread and other propitiations.

‘Probably because he has a mother or sister,’ said David, slowly. ‘We trust a good deal to the patience of our “masters.” ’

The Colonel stopped his wife’s attentions with an angry hand. But just as he was about to launch a reply more congruous with his gout and his contempt for ‘Driffield’s low-life friends ‘than with the amenities of ordinary society, and while Lady Venetia was slowly and severely studying David through her eye-glass. Lord Driffield threw himself into the breach with a nervous story of some favourite ‘man ‘of his own, and the storm blew over.

Lady Driffield, indeed, who herself disliked Colonel Danby, as one overbearing person dislikes another, and only invited him because Lady Venetia was her cousin and an old friend, was rather pleased with David’s outbreak. After breakfast she graciously asked him if she should show him the picture gallery. But David was still seething with wrath, and looked at Vandeveldes and De Hoochs and Rembrandts with a distracted eye. Once, indeed, in a little alcove of the

[211]

gallery hung with English portraits he woke to a start of interest.

‘Imagine that that should be Gray!’ he said, pointing to a picture — well known to him through engraving — of a little man in a bob wig, with a turned-up nose and a button chin, and a general air of eager servility. ‘*Gray* — one of our greatest poets!’ He stood wondering, feeling it impossible to fit the dignity of Gray’s verse to the insignificance of Gray’s outer man.

‘Oh, Gray — a great poet, you think? I don’t agree

with you. I have always thought the “Night Thoughts” very dull,’ said Lady Drifffield, sweeping along to the next picture, in a sublime unconsciousness. David smiled — a flash of mirth that cleared his whole look — and was himself again. Moreover he was soon taken possession of by Lord Drifffield, and the two disappeared for a happy morning spent between the library and the woods.

Meanwhile Lucy went to church, and had the bliss of feeling that she made one too many in the omnibus, and that, squeeze herself as small as she might, she was still crushing Miss Danby’s new dress — a fact of which both mother and daughter were clearly aware. Looking back upon it. Lucy could not remember that for her there had been any conversation going or coming; but it is quite possible that her memory of Benet’s Park was even more pronounced than the reality.

David and Lord Drifffield came in when lunch was

[212]

half over, and afterwards there was a general strolling into the garden.

‘Are you all right?’ said David to his wife, taking her arm affectionately.

‘Oh yes, thank you,’ she said hurriedly, perceiving that Reggie Calvert was coming up to her. ‘I’m all right. Don’t take my arm, David. It looks so odd.’

And she turned delightedly to talk to the young diplomatist, who had the kindness and charm of his race, and devoted himself to her very prettily for a while, though they had great difficulty in finding topics, and he was coming finally to the end of his resources when Lady Drifffield announced that ‘the carriage would be round in half an hour.’

‘Goodness gracious! then I must write some letters first,’ he said, with the importance of the budding ambassador, and ran into the house.

The others seemed to melt away — David and Canon Aylwin strolling off together — and soon Lucy found herself alone. She sat down in a seat round which curved a yew hedge, and whence there was a somewhat wide view over a bare, hilly country, with suggestions everywhere of factory life in the hollows, till on the south-

west it rose and melted into the Derbyshire moors. Autumn — late autumn — was on all the reddening woods and in the cool sunshine; but there was a bright border of sunflowers and dahlias near, which no frost had yet touched, and the gaiety both of the

[213]

flowers and of the clear blue distance forbade as yet any thought of winter.

Lucy's absent and discontented eye saw neither flowers nor distance; but it was perforce arrested before long by the figure of Mrs. Shepton, who came round the corner of the yew hedge.

'Have they gone?' said that lady.

'Who?' said Lucy, startled. 'I heard a carriage drive off just now, I think.'

'Ah! then they are, gone. Lady Driffield has carried off all her friends — except Mrs. Wellesdon, who, I believe, is lying down with a headache — to tea at Sir Wilfrid Herbart's. You see the house there' — and she pointed to a dim, white patch among woods, about five miles off. 'It is not very civil of a hostess, perhaps, to leave her guests in this way. But Lady Driffield is Lady Driffield.'

Mrs. Shepton laughed, and threw back the flapping green gauze veil with which she generally shrouded a freckled and serviceable complexion, in no particular danger, one would have thought, of spoiling.

Lucy instinctively looked round to see how near they were to the house, and whether there were any windows open.

'It must be very difficult, I should think, to be — to be friends with Lady Driffield.'

She looked up at Mrs. Shepton with the childish air of one both hungry for gossip and conscious of the naughtiness of it.

[214]

Mrs. Shepton laughed again. She had never seen anyone behave worse, she reflected, than Lady Driffield to this little Manchester person, who might be uninteresting, but was quite inoffensive.

‘Friends! I should think so. An armed neutrality is all that pays with Lady Driffield. I have been here many times, and I can now keep her in order perfectly. You see, Lady Driffield has a brother whom she happens to be fond of — everybody has some soft place — and this brother is a Liberal member down in our West Riding part of the world. And my husband is the editor of a paper that possesses a great deal of political influence in the brother’s constituency. We have backed him up through this election. He is not a bad fellow at all, though about as much of a Liberal at heart as this hedge,’ and Mrs. Shepton struck it lightly with the parasol she carried. ‘My husband thinks we got him in — by the skin of his teeth. So Lady Driffield asks us periodically, and behaves herself, more or less. My husband likes Lord Driffield. So do I; and an occasional descent upon country houses amuses me. It especially entertains me to make Lady Driffield talk politics.’

‘She must be very Conservative,’ said Lucy, heartily. Conservatism stood in her mind for the selfish exclusiveness of big people. Her father had always been a bitter Radical.

‘Oh dear no — not at all! Lady Driffield believes herself an advanced Liberal; that is the comedy of it.’

[215]

Liberals!’ cried Mrs. Shepton, with a sudden bitterness, which transformed the broad, plain, sleepy face. ‘I should like to set her to work for a year in one of those mills down there. She might have some politics worth having by the end of it.’

Lucy looked at her in amazement. Why, the mill people were very happy — most of them.

‘Ah well!’ said Mrs. Shepton, recovering herself, ‘what we have to do — we intelligent middle class — for the next generation or two, is to drive these aristocrats. Then it will be seen what is to be done with them finally. Well, Mrs. Grieve, we must amuse ourselves. *Au revoir!* My husband has some writing to do, and I must go and help him.’

She waved her hand and disappeared, sweeping her green and yellow skirts behind her with an air as though Benet’s Park were already a seminary for the correction of the great.

Lucy sat on pondering till she felt dull and cold, and decided to go in. On finding her way back she passed round a side of the house which she had not yet seen. It was the oldest part of the building, and the windows, which were mullioned and narrow, and at some height from the ground, looked out upon a small bowling-green, closely walled in from the rest of the gardens and the park by a thick screen of trees. She lingered along the path looking at a few late roses which were still blooming in this sheltered spot against the wall of the house, when she was startled by the

[216]

sound of her own name, and, looking up, she saw that there was an open window above her. The temptation was too great. She held her breath and listened.

‘Lord Driffield says he married her when he was quite young, that accounts for it.’ Was not the voice Lady Alice’s? ‘But it is a pity that she is not more equal to him. I never saw a more striking face, did you? Yet Lord Driffield says he is not as good-looking as he promised to be as a boy. I wish we had been there last night after dinner, Marcia! They say he gave Colonel Danby such a dressing about some workmen’s question. Colonel Danby was laying down the law about strikes in his usual way — he is an odious creature! — and wishing that the Government would just send an infantry regiment into the middle of the Yorkshire miners that are on strike now, when Mr. Grieve fired up. And everybody backed him. Reggie told me it was splendid; he never saw a better shindy. It is a pity about her. Everybody says he might have a great career if he pleased. And she can’t be any companion to him. — Now, Marcia,

you know your head is better, so don't say it isn't! Why, I have used a whole bottle of eau de Cologne on you.'

So chattered pretty, kindly Lady Alice, sitting with her back to the window beside Marcia Wellesdon. Lucy stood still a moment, could not hear what Mrs. Wellesdon said languidly in answer, then crept on, her lip quivering.

From then till long after the dark had fallen she

[217]

was quite alone. David, coming back from a long walk, and tea at the agent's house on the further edge of the estate, found his wife lying on her bed, and the stars beginning to look in upon her through the unshuttered windows.

'Why, Lucy! aren't you well, dear?' he said, hurrying up to her.

'Oh yes, very well, thank you,' she said, in a constrained voice. 'My head aches rather.'

'Who has been looking after you?' he said, instantly reproaching himself for the enjoyment of his own afternoon.

'I have been here since three o'clock.'

'And nobody gave you any tea?' he asked, flushing.

'No, I went down, but there was nobody in the drawing-room. I suppose the footman thought nobody was in.'

'Where was Lady Driffield?'

'Oh! she and most of them went out to tea — to a house a good way off.'

Lucy's tone was dreariness itself. David sat still, his breath coming quickly. Then suddenly Lucy turned round and drew him down to her passionately.

'When can we get home? Is there an early train?'

Then David understood. He took her in his arms, and she broke down and cried, sobbing out a catalogue of griefs that was only half coherent. But he saw at once that she had been neglected and slighted, nay

[218]

more, that she had been somehow wounded to the quick. His clasped hand trembled on his knee. This was hospitality! He had gauged Lady Driffield well.

‘An early train?’ he said, with frowning decision. ‘Yes, of course. There is to be an eight o’clock breakfast for those who want to get off. We shall be home by a little after nine. Cheer up, darling. I will look after you to-night — and think of Sandy to-morrow!’

He laid his cheek tenderly against hers, full of a passion of resentment and pity. As for her, the feeling with which she clung to him was more like the feeling she had first shown him on the Wakely moors, than anything she had known since.

‘Sandy! why don’t you say good morning, sir?’ said David next morning, standing on the threshold of his own study, with Lucy just behind. His face was beaming with the pleasures of home.

Sandy, who was lying curled up in David’s armchair, looked sleepily at his parents. His thumb was tightly wedged in his mouth, and with the other he held pressed against him a hideous rag doll, which had been presented to him in his cradle.

‘Jane’s asleep,’ he said, just removing his thumb for the purpose, and then putting it back again.

‘Heartless villain!’ said David, taking possession of both him and Jane. ‘And do you mean to say you aren’t glad to see Daddy and Mammy?’

‘Zes — but Sandy’s so fond of childwen,’ said Sandy,

[219]

cuddling Jane up complacently, and subsiding into his father’s arms.

Husband and wife laughed into each other’s eyes. Then Lucy knelt down to tie the child’s shoe, and David, first kissing the boy, bent forward and laid another kiss on the mother’s hair.

[220]

CHAPTER V

‘AN exciting post,’ said David to Lucy one morning as she entered the dining-room for breakfast. ‘Louie proposes to bring her little girl over to see us, and Ancrum will be home to-night.’

‘Louie!’ repeated Mrs. Grieve, standing still in her amazement. ‘What do you mean?’

It was certainly unexpected. David had not heard from Louie for more than six months; his remittances to her, however, were at all times so casually acknowledged that he had taken no particular notice; and he and she had not met for two years and more — since that visit to Paris, in fact, recorded in his journal.

‘It is quite true,’ said David; ‘it seems to be one of her sudden schemes. I don’t see any particular reason for it. She says she must “put matters before” me, and that Cecile wants a change. I don’t see that a change to Manchester in February is likely to help the poor child much. No, it must mean more money. We must make up our minds to that,’ said David with a little sad smile, looking at his wife.

‘David! I don’t see that you’re called to do it at all!’ cried Lucy. ‘Why, you’ve done much more for

[221]

her than anybody else would have done! What they do with the money I can’t think — dreadful people!’

She began to pour out the tea with vehemence and an angry lip. She had always in her mind that vision of Louie, as she had seen her for the first and only time in her life, marching up Marketplace in the ‘loud’ hat and the black and scarlet dress, stared at and staring. Nor had she ever lost her earliest impression of strong dislike which had come upon her immediately afterwards, when Louie and Reuben had mounted to Dora’s sitting-room, and she, Lucy, had angrily told the quick-fingered,

bold-eyed girl who claimed to be David Grieve's sister not to touch Dora's work. Nay, every year since had but intensified it, especially since their income had ceased to expand rapidly, and the drain of the Montjoies' allowance had been more plainly felt. She might have begun to feel a little ashamed of herself that she was able to give her husband so little sympathy in his determination to share his gains with his co-workers. She was quite clear that she was right in resenting the wasting of his money on such worthless people as the Montjoies. It was disgusting that they should sponge upon them so — and with hardly a 'thank you' all the time. Oh dear, no! — Louie took everything as her right, and had once abused David through four pages because his cheque had been two days late.

David received his wife's remarks in a meditative silence. He devoted himself a while to Sandy, who was eating porridge at his right hand, and tended with

[222]

great regularity to bestow on his pinafore what was meant for his mouth. At last he said, pushing the letter over to Lucy:

'You had better read it, Lucy. She talks of coming next week.'

Lucy read it with mounting wrath. It was the outcome of a fit of characteristic violence. Louie declared that she could stand her life no longer; that she was coming over to put things before David; and if he couldn't help her, she and her child would just go out and beg. She understood from an old Manchester acquaintance whom she had met in the Rue de Rivoli about Christmas-time that David was doing very well with his business. She wished him joy of it. If he was prosperous, it was more than she was. Nobody ever seemed to trouble their heads about her.

'Well, I never!' said Lucy, positively choked. 'Why, it's not much more than a month since you sent her that last cheque. And now I know you'll be saying you can't afford yourself a new great-coat. It's disgraceful! They'll suck you dry, those kind of people, if you let them.'

She had taken no pains so far to curb her language for the sake of her husband's feelings. But as she gave vent to the last acid phrase she felt a sudden compunction. For David was looking straight before him into vacancy, with a painful intensity in the eyes, and a curious droop and contraction of the mouth. Why did he so often worry himself about Louie? He had done all he could, anyway.

[223]

She got up and went over to him with his tea. He woke up from his absorption and thanked her.

'Is it right?'

'Just right!' he said, tasting it. 'All the same, Lucy, it would be really nice of you to be kind to her and poor little Cecile. It won't be easy for either of us having Louie here.'

He began to cut up his bread with sudden haste, then, pausing again, he went on in a low voice. 'But if one leaves a task like that undone it makes a sore spot, a fester in the mind.'

She went back to the place in silence.

'What day is it to be?' she said presently. Certainly they both looked dejected.

'The 16th, isn't it? I wonder who the Manchester acquaintance was. He must have given a rose-coloured account. We aren't so rich as all that, are we, wife?'

He glanced at her with a charming half-apprehensive smile, which made his face young again. Lucy looked ready to cry.

'I know you'll get out of buying that coat,' she said with energy, as though referring to an already familiar topic of discussion between them.

'No, I won't,' said David cheerfully. 'I'll buy it before Louie comes, if that will please you. Oh, we shall do, dear! I've had a real good turn at the shop this last month. Things will look better this quarter's end, you'll see.'

'Why, I thought you'd been so busy in the printing-

[224]

office,' she said, a good deal cheered, however, by his remark.

'So we have. But John's a brick, and doesn't care how much he does. And the number of men who take a personal interest in the house, who do their utmost to forward work, and to prevent waste and scamping, is growing fast. When once we get the apprentices' school into full working order, we shall see.'

David gave himself a great stretch; and then, thrusting his hands deep into his pockets, stood by the fire enjoying it and his dreams together.

'Has it begun?' said Lucy. Her tone was not particularly cordial; but anyone who knew them well would perhaps have reflected that six months before he would have neither made his remark, nor she have asked her question.

'Yes — what?' he said with a start. 'Oh, the school! It has begun tentatively. Six of our best men give in rotation two hours a day to it at the time when work and the machines are slackest. And we have one or two teachers from outside. Twenty-three boys have entered. I have begun to pay them a penny a day for attendance.'

His face lit up with merriment as though he anticipated her remonstrance.

'David, how foolish! If you coax them like that they won't care a bit about it.'

'Well, the experiment has been tried by a great French firm,' he said, 'and it did well. It is really a

[225]

slight addition to wages, and pays the firm in the end. You should see the little fellows hustle up for their money. I pay it them every month.'

'And it all comes out of your pocket — that, of course, I needn't ask,' said Lucy. But her sarcasm was not bitter, and she had a motherly eye the while to the way in which Sandy was stuffing himself with his bread and jam.

'Well,' he said, laughing and making no attempt to excuse himself, 'but I tell you, madam, you will do better this year. I positively must make some money out of the

shop for you and myself too. So I have been going at it like twenty horses, and we've sent out a splendid catalogue.'

'Oh, I say, David!' said Lucy, dismayed, 'you're not going to take the shop-money too to spend on the printing?'

'I won't take anything that will leave you denuded,' he said affectionately; 'and whenever I want anything I'll tell you all about it — if you like.'

He looked at her significantly. She did not answer for a minute, then she said:

'Don't you want me to give those boys a treat some time?'

'Yes, when the weather gets more decent, if it ever does. We must give them a day on the moors — take them to Clough End perhaps. Oh, look here!' he exclaimed with a sudden change of tone, 'let us ask Uncle Reuben to come and spend the day to see Louie?'

'Why, he won't leave her,' said Lucy.

[226]

'Who? Aunt Hannah Oh yes, he will. It's wonderful what she can do now. I saw her in November, you remember, when I went to see Margaret. It's a resurrection. Poor Uncle Reuben!'

'What do you mean?' said Lucy, startled.

'Well,' said David slowly, with a half tender, half humorous twist of the lip, 'he can't understand it. He prayed so many years, and it made no difference. Then came a new doctor, and with electricity and rubbing it was all done. Oh yes, Uncle Reuben would like to see Louie. And I want to show him that boy there!'

He nodded at Sandy, who sat staring open-mouthed and open-eyed at his parents, a large piece of bread and jam slipping slowly down his throat.

'David, you're silly,' said Lucy. But she went to stand by him at the fire, and slipped her hand inside his arm. 'I suppose she and Cecile had better have the front room,' she went on slowly.

'Yes, that would be the most cheerful.'

Then they were silent a little, he leaning his head lightly against hers.

‘Well, I must go,’ he said, rousing himself; ‘I shall just catch the train. Send a line to Ancrum, there’s a dear, to say I will go and see him to-night. Four months! I am afraid he has been very bad.’

Lucy stood by the fire a little, lost in many contradictory feelings. There was in her a strange sense as of some long strain slowly giving way, the quiet melting of some old hardness. Ever since that autumn

[227]

time when, after their return from Benet’s Park, her husband’s chivalry and delicacy of feeling had given back to her the self-respect and healed the self-love which had been so rudely hurt, there had been a certain readjustment of Lucy’s nature going on below the little commonplaces and vanities and affections of her life which she herself would never have been able to explain. It implied the gradual abandonment of certain ambitions, the relinquishment bit by bit of an arid and fruitless effort.

She would stand and sigh sometimes — long, regretful sighs like a child — for she knew not what. But David would have his way, and it was no good; and he loved him and Sandy.

But she owed no love to Louie Montjoie! It was a relief to her now — an escape from an invading sweetness of which her little heart was almost afraid — to sit down and plan how she would protect David from that grasping woman and her unspeakable husband.

‘David, my dear fellow!’ said Ancrum’s weak voice.

He rose with difficulty from his seat by the fire. The room was the same little lodging-house sitting-room in Mortimer Road, where David years before had poured out his boyish account of himself. Neither chiffonnier, nor pictures, nor antimacassars had changed at all; the bustling landlady was still loud and vigorous. But Ancrum was a shadow.

[228]

‘You are better?’ David said, holding his hand in both his.

‘Oh yes, better for a time. Not for long, thank God!’

David looked at him with painful emotion. Several times during these eight years had he seen Ancrum emerge from these mysterious crises of his, a broken and shattered man, whom only the force of a super-human will could drag back to life and work. But he had never yet seen him so beaten down, so bloodless, so emaciated as this. Lung mischief had declared itself more than a year before this date, and had clearly made progress during this last attack of melancholia. He thought to himself that his old friend could not have long to live.

‘Has Williams been to see you?’ he asked, naming a doctor whom Ancrum had long known and trusted.

‘Oh yes! He can do nothing. He tells me to give in and go to the south. But there is a little work left in me still. I wanted my boys. I grew to pine for my boys — up there.’

‘Up there’ meant that house in Scotland where lived the friends bound to him by such tragic memories of help asked and rendered in a man’s worst extremity, that he could never speak of them when he was living his ordinary life in Manchester, passionately as he loved them.

They chatted a little about the boys, some of whom David had been keeping an eye on. Five or six of

[229]

them, indeed, were in his printing-office, and learning in the apprentices’ school he had just started.

But in the middle of their talk, with a sudden change of look, Ancrum stooped forward and laid his hand on David’s.

‘A little more, Davy — I have just to get a little worse —and *she* will come to me.’

David was not sure that he understood. Ancrum had only spoken of his wife once since the night when, led on by sympathy and emotion, he had met David’s young confession by the story of his own fate. She was still teaching at Glasgow so far as David knew, where she was liked and respected.

‘Yes, Davy — when I have come to the end of my tether — when I can do no more but die — I shall call — and she will come. It has so far killed us to be together — more than a few hours in the year. But when life is all over for me —she will be kind — and I shall be able to forget it all. Oh, the hours I have sat here thinking —thinking — and *gnashing my teeth!* My boys think me a kind, gentle, harmless creature, Davy. They little know the passions I have carried within me —passions of hate and bitterness — outcries against God and man. But there has been One with me through the storms’ — his voice sank —‘aye! and I have gone to Him again and again with the old cry — Master! —Master! — *carest Thou not that we perish?*’

His drawn grey face worked and he mastered him- self with difficulty. David held his hand firm and close

[230]

in a silence which carried with it a love and sympathy not to be expressed.

‘Let me just say this to you, Davy,’ Ancrum went on presently, ‘before we shut the door on this kind of talk — for when a man has got a few things to do and very little strength to do ’em with, he must not waste himself. You may hear any day that I have been received into the Catholic Church, or you may only hear it when I am dying. One way or the other, you will hear it. It has been strange to go about all these years among my Unitarian and dissenting friends and to know that this would be the inevitable end of it. I have struggled alone for peace and certainty. I cannot get them for myself. There is an august, an inconceivable possibility which makes my heart stand still when I think of it, that the Catholic Church may verily have them to give, as she

says she has. I am weak — I shall submit — I shall throw myself upon her breast at last.’

‘But why not now,’ said David, tenderly, ‘if it would give you comfort?’

Ancrum did not answer at once; he sat rubbing his hands restlessly over the fire.

‘I don’t know — I don’t know,’ he said at last. ‘I have told you what the end will be, Davy. But the will still flutters — flutters — in my poor breast, like a caged thing.’

Then that beautiful half-wild smile of his lit up the face.

[231]

‘Bear with me, you strong man! What have you been doing with yourself? How many more courts have you been pulling down? And how much more of poor Madam Lucy’s money have you been throwing out of window?’

He took up his old tone, half bantering, half affectionate, and teased David out of the history of the last six months. While he sat listening he reflected once more, as he had so often reflected, upon the difference between the reality of David Grieve’s life as it was and his, Ancrum’s, former imaginations of what it would be. A rapid rise to wealth and a new social status, removal to London, a great public career, a personality, and an influence conspicuous in the eyes of England — all these things he had once dreamed of as belonging to the natural order of David’s development. What he had actually witnessed had been the struggle of a hidden life to realise certain ideal aims under conditions of familiar difficulty and limitation, the dying down of that initial brilliance and passion to succeed, into a wrestle of conscience as sensitive as it was profound, as tenacious as it was scrupulous. He had watched an unsatisfactory marriage, had realised the silent resolve of the north-countryman to stand by his own people, of the man sprung from the poor to cling to the poor: he had become familiar with the veins of melancholy by which both character and life were crossed. That glittering

prince of circumstance as he had once foreseen him, was still enshrined in memory and fancy; but the real man was knit to the cripple's inmost heart.

[232]

Another observer, perhaps, might have wondered at Ancrum's sense of difference and disillusion. For David after all had made a mark. As he sat talking to Ancrum of the new buildings behind the printing-office where he now employed from two to three hundred men, of the ups and downs of his profit-sharing experiences, of this apprentices' school for the sons of members of the 'house,' imitated from one of the same kind founded by a great French printing firm, and the object just now of a passionate energy of work on David's part — or as he diverged into the history of an important trade dispute in Manchester, where he had been appointed arbitrator by the unanimous voice of both sides — as he told these things, it was not doubtful even for Ancrum that his power and consideration were spreading in his own town.

But, substantially, Ancrum was right. Hard labour and natural gift had secured their harvest; but that vivid personal element in success which captivates and excites the bystander seemed, in David's case, to have been replaced by something austere, which pointed attention and sympathy rather to the man's work than to himself. When he was young there had been intoxication for such a spectator as Ancrum in the magical rapidity and ease with which he seized opportunity and beat down difficulty. Now that he was mature, he was but one patient toiler the more at the eternal puzzles of our humanity.

Ancrum let him talk awhile. He had always felt a

[233]

certain interest in David's schemes, though they were not of a quality and sort with which a mind like his naturally concerned itself. But his interest now could not hold out so long as once it could.

‘Ah, that will do — that will do, dear fellow!’ he said, interrupting and touching David’s hand with apologetic affection. ‘I seem to feel your pulse beating 150 to the minute, and it tires me so I can’t bear myself. Gossip to me. How is Sandy?’

David laughed, and had as usual a new batch of ‘Sandiana’ to produce. Then he talked of Louie’s coming and of the invitation which had been sent to Reuben Grieve.

‘I shall come and sit in a corner and look at *her*’ said Ancrum, nodding at Louie’s name. ‘What sort of a life has she been leading all these years? Neither you nor I can much imagine. But what beauty it used to be! How will John stand seeing her again?’

David smiled, but did not think it would affect John very greatly. He was absorbed in the business of Grieve & Co., and no less round, rosy, and trusty than he had always been.

‘Well, good night — good night!’ said Ancrum, and seemed to be looking at the clock uneasily. ‘Come again, Davy, and I dare say I shall struggle up to you.’

At that moment the door opened, and, in spite of a hasty shout from Ancrum, which she did not or would not understand, Mrs. Elsley, his landlady, came into the room, bearing his supper. She put down the tray,

[234]

seemed to invite David’s attention to it by her indignant look, and flounced out again like one bursting with forbidden speech.

‘Ancrum, this is absurd!’ cried David, pointing to the tea and morsel of dry bread which were to provide this shrunken invalid with his evening meal. ‘You can’t live on this stuff now, you know — you want some- thing more tempting and more nourishing. Do be rational!’

Ancrum sprang up, hobbled with unusual alacrity across the room, and, laying hold of David, made a feint of ejecting his visitor.

‘You get along and leave me to my wittles!’ he said with the smile of a schoolboy; ‘I don’t spy on you when you’re at your meals.’

David crossed his arms.

‘I shall have to send Lucy down every morning to housekeep with Mrs. Elsley,’ he said firmly.

‘Now, David, hold your tongue! I couldn’t eat anything else if I tried. And there are two boys down with typhoid in Friar’s Yard —drat ’em! — and scarcely a rag on ’em: don’t you understand? And besides, David, if *she* comes, I shall want a pound or two, you see?’

He did not look at his visitor’s face nor let his own be seen. He simply pushed David through the door and shut it.

‘Sandy, they’re just come!’ cried Lucy in some

[235]

excitement, hugging the child to her by way of a last pleasant experience before the advent of her sister-in-law. Then she put the child down on the sofa and went out to meet the new-comers.

Sandy sucked a meditative thumb, putting his face to the window, and surveyed the arrival which was going on in the front garden. There was a great deal of noise and talking; the lady in the grey cloak was scolding the cabman, and ‘Daddy’ was taking her bags and parcels from her, and trying to make her come in. On the steps stood a little girl looking frightened and tired. Sandy twisted his head round and studied her carefully. But he showed no signs of running out to meet her. She might be nice, or she might be nasty. Sandy had a cautious philosophical way with him towards novelties. He remained perfectly still with his cheek pressed against the glass.

The door opened. In came Louie, with Lucy looking already flushed and angry behind her, and David, last of all, holding Cecile by the hand.

Louie was in the midst of denunciations of the cabman, who had, according to her, absorbed into his system, or handed over to an accomplice on the way, a bandbox

which had certainly been put in at St. Pancras, and which contained Cecile's best hat. She was red and furious, and David felt himself as much attacked as the cabman, for to the best of his ability he had transferred them and their packages, at the Midland station, from the train to the cab.

[236]

In the midst of her tirade, however, she suddenly stopped short and looked round the room she had just entered — Lucy's low comfortable sitting-room, with David's books overflowing into every nook and corner, the tea-table spread, and the big fire which Lucy had been nervously feeding during her time of waiting for the travellers.

'Well, you've got a fire, anyway,' she said, brusquely. 'I thought you'd have a bigger house than this by now.'

'Oh, thank you, it's quite big enough!' cried Lucy, going to the tea-table and holding herself very straight. '*Quite* big enough for anything *we* want! Will you take your tea?'

Louie threw herself into an armchair and looked about her.

'Where's the little boy?' she inquired.

'I'm here,' said a small solemn voice from behind the sofa, 'but I'm not *your* boy.'

And Sandy, discovered with his back to the window, replaced the thumb which he had removed to make the remark, and went on staring with portentous gravity at the new-comers. Cecile had nervously disengaged herself from David and was standing by her mother.

'Why, he's small for his age!' exclaimed Louie; 'I'm sure he's small for his age. Why, he's nearly five!'

'Come here, Sandy,' said David, 'and let your aunt and cousin look at you.'

Sandy reluctantly sidled across the room so as to keep as far as possible from his aunt and cousin, and

[237]

fastened on his father's hand. He and the little girl looked at one another.

'Go and kiss her,' said David.

Sandy most unwillingly allowed himself to be put forward. Cecile with a little patronising woman-of-the-world air stooped and kissed him first on one cheek and then on the other. Louie only looked at him. Her black eyes — no less marvellous than of yore, although now the brilliancy of them owed something to art as well as nature, as Lucy at once perceived — stared him up and down, taking stock minutely.

'He's well made,' she said grudgingly, 'and his colour isn't bad. Cecile, take your hat off.'

The child obeyed, and the mother with hasty fingers pulled her hair forward here, and put it back there. 'Look at the thickness of it,' she said, proudly pointing it out to David. 'They'd have given me two guineas for it in the Rue de la Paix the other day. Why didn't that child have your hair, I wonder?' she added, nodding towards Sandy.

'Because he preferred his mother's, I suppose,' said David, smiling at Lucy, and wondering through his discomfort what Sandy could possibly be doing with his coat-tail. He seemed to be elaborately scrubbing his face with it.

'What are you doing with my coat, villain?' he said, lifting his son in his arms.

Sandy found his father's ear, and with infinite precaution whispered vindictively into it:

[238]

'I've wiped *them* kisses off anyhow.'

David suppressed him, and devoted himself to the travellers and their tea.

Every now and then he took a quiet look at his sister. Louie was in some ways more beautiful than ever. She carried herself magnificently, and as she sat at the tea-table — restless always — she fell unconsciously into one fine attitude after another, no

doubt because of her long practice as a sculptor's model. All the girl's awkwardness had disappeared; she had the insolent ease which goes with tried and conscious power. But with the angularity and thinness of first youth had gone also that wild and startling radiance which Montjoie had caught and fixed in the Maenad statue — the one enduring work of a ruined talent, now to be found in the Luxembourg by anyone who cares to look for it. Her beauty was less original; it had taken throughout the second-rate Parisian stamp; she had the townswoman's pallor, as compared with the moorland red and white of her youth; and round the eyes and mouth in a full daylight were already to be seen the lines which grave the history of passionate and selfish living.

But if her beauty was less original, it was infinitely more finished. Lucy beside her stumbled among the cups, and grew more and more self-conscious; she had felt much the same at Benet's Park beside Lady Venetia Danby; only here there was a strong personal

[239]

animosity and disapproval fighting with the disagreeable sense of being outshone.

She left almost all the talk to her husband, and employed herself in looking after Cecile, David, who had left his work with difficulty to meet his sister, did his best to keep her going on indifferent subjects, wondering the while what it was that she had come all this way to say to him, and perfectly aware that her sharp eyes were in every place, taking a depreciatory inventory of his property, his household, and his circumstances.

Suddenly Louie said something to Cecile in violent French. It was to the effect that she was to hold herself up and not stoop like an idiot.

The child, who was shyly eating her tea, flushed all over, and drew herself up with painful alacrity. Louie went on with a loud account of the civility shown her by some gentlemen on the Paris boat and on the journey from Dover. In the middle of it she stopped short, her eye flamed, she bent forward with a rapidity of a cat that springs, and slapped Cecile smartly on the right cheek.

‘I was watching you!’ she cried. ‘Are you never going to obey me — do you think I am going to drag a hunchback about with me?’

Both David and Lucy started forward. Cecile dropped her bread and butter and began to cry in a loud, shrill voice, hitting out meanwhile at her mother with her tiny hands in a frenzy of rage and fear.

[240]

Sandy, frightened out of his wits, set up a loud howl also, till his mother caught him up and carried him away.

‘Louie, the child is tired out!’ said David, trying to quiet Cecile and dry her tears. ‘What was that for?’

Louie’s chest heaved.

‘Because she won’t do what I tell her,’ she said fiercely. ‘What am I to do with her when she grows up? Who’ll ever look at her twice?’

She scowled at the child who had taken refuge on David’s knee, then with a sudden change of expression she held out her arms, and said imperiously:

‘Give her to me.’

David relinquished her, and the mother took the little trembling creature on her knee.

‘Be quiet then,’ she said to her roughly, always in French, ‘I didn’t hurt you. There! *Veux-tu du gâteau?*’

She cut some with eager fingers and held it to Cecile’s lips. The child turned away, silently refusing it, the tears rolling down her cheeks. The mother devoured her with eyes of remorse and adoration, while her face was still red with anger.

‘*Dis-moi*, you don’t feel anything?’ she said, kissing her hungrily. ‘Are you tired? Shall I carry you upstairs and put you on the bed to rest?’

And she did carry her up, not allowing David to touch her. When they were at last safe in their own room, David came down to his study and threw himself into his chair in the dark with a groan.

[241]

CHAPTER VI

LOUIE and her child entered the sitting-room together when the bell rang for supper-tea. Louie had put on a high red silk dress of a brilliant, almost scarlet, tone, which showed her arms from the elbows and was very slightly clouded here and there with black; Cecile crept beside her, a little pale shadow, in a white muslin frock, adorned, however, as Lucy's vigilant eyes immediately perceived, with some very dainty and expensive embroidery. The mother's dress reminded her of that in which she first saw Louie Grieve; so did her splendid and reckless carriage; so did the wild play of her black eyes, always on the watch for opportunities of explosion and offence. How did they get their dresses? Who paid for them? And now they had come over to beg for more! Lucy could hardly keep a civil tongue in her head at all, as her sister-in-law swept round the room making strong and, to the mistress of the house, cutting remarks on the difference between 'Manchester dirt' and the brightness and cleanliness of Paris. Why, she lorded it over them as though the place belonged to her! 'And she is just a pauper — living on

[242]

what we give her!' thought Lucy to herself with exasperation.

After supper, at which Louie behaved with the same indefinable insolence — whether as regarded the food or the china, or the shaky moderator lamp, a relic from David's earliest bachelor days, which only he could coax into satisfactory burning — Lucy made the move, and said to her with cold constraint:

'Will you come into the drawing-room? — David has a pipe in the study after dinner.'

'I want to speak to David,' said Louie, pushing back her chair with noisy decision. 'I'll go with him. He can smoke as much as he likes — I'm used to it.'

‘Well, then, come into my study,’ said David, trying to speak cheerfully. ‘Lucy will look after Cecile.’

To Louie’s evident triumph Cecile made difficulties about going with her aunt, but was at last persuaded by the prospect of seeing Sandy in bed. She had already shown signs in her curious frightened way of a considerable interest in Sandy.

Then David led the way to the study. He put his sister into his armchair and stood pipe in hand beside her, looking down upon her. In his heart there was the passionate self-accusing sense that he could not feel pity, or affection, or remorse for the past when she was there; every look and word roused in him the old irritation, the old wish to master her, he had known so often in his youth. Yet he drew himself together, striving to do his best.

[243]

‘Well, now, look here,’ said Louie defiantly, ‘I want some money.’

‘So I supposed,’ he said quietly, lighting his pipe.

Louie reddened.

‘Well, and if I do want it,’ she said, breathing quickly, ‘I’ve a right to want it. You chose to waste all that moneys—all my money — on that marrying business, and you must take the consequence. I look upon it this way — you promised to put my money into your trade and give me a fair share of your profits. Then you chucked it away — you made me spend it all, and now, of course, I’m to have nothing to say to your profits. Oh dear, no! It’s a trifle that I’m a pauper and you’re rolling in money compared to me anyway. Oh! it doesn’t matter nothing to nobody — not at all! All the same you couldn’t have made the start you did — not those few months I was with you — without my money. Why can’t you confess it, I want to know — and behave more handsome to me now — instead of leaving me in that state that I haven’t a franc to bless myself with!’

She threw herself back in her chair, with one arm flung behind her head. David stared at her tongue-tied for a while by sheer amazement.

‘I gave you everything I had,’ he said, at last, with a slow distinctness, ‘all your money, and all my own too. When I came back here, I had my new stock, it is true, but it was much of it unpaid for. My first struggle was to get my neck out of debt.’

[244]

He paused, shrinking with a kind of sick repulsion from the memory of that bygone year of shattered nerves and anguished effort. Deliberately he let thought and speech of it drop. Louie was the last person in the world to whom he could talk of it.

‘I built up my business again,’ he resumed, ‘by degrees. Mr. Doyle lent me money — it was on that capital I first began to thrive. From the very beginning, even in the very year when I handed over to you all our father’s money — I sent you more. And every year since — you know as well as I do — ’

But again he looked away and paused. Once more he felt himself on a wrong tack. What was the use of laying out, so to speak, all that he had done in the sight of these angry eyes? Besides, a certain high pride restrained him.

Louie looked a trifle disconcerted, and her flush deepened. Her audacious attempt to put him in the wrong and provide herself with a grievance could not be carried on. She took refuge in passion.

‘Oh, I dare say you think you’ve done a precious lot!’ she said, sitting straight up and locking her hands round her knee, while the whole frame of her stiffened and quivered. ‘I suppose you think other people would think so too, I don’t care! It don’t matter to me. You’re the only belonging I’ve got — who else was there for me to look to? Oh, it is all very fine! All I know is, I can’t stand my life any more! If you can’t do anything, I’ll just pack

[245]

up my traps and go. *Somebody* ’ll have to make it easier for me, that’s all! Last week — I was out of the house — he found out where I kept my money, he broke the lock open,

and when I got home there was nothing. *Nothing*, I tell you! ‘Her voice rose to a shrillness that made David look to see that the door between them and Lucy was securely closed. ‘And I’d promised a whole lot of things to the church for Easter, and Cecile and I haven’t got a rag between us; and as for the rent, the landlord may whistle for it! Oh! the beast ! ‘ she said, between her teeth, while the fierce tears stood in her eyes.

Lucy — any woman of normal shrewdness, putting two and two together — would have allowed these complaints about half their claimed weight. Upon David — unconsciously inclined to measure all emotion by his own standard — they produced an immediate and deep impression.

‘You poor thing!’ he murmured, as he stood looking down upon her.

She tossed her head, as though resenting his compassion.

‘Yes, I’m about tired of it! I thought I’d come over and tell you that. Now you know, - -and if you hear things you don’t like, don’t blame me, that’s all!’

Her great eyes blazed into his. He understood her. Her child — the priests — had, so far, restrained her. Now — what strange mixture of shameless impulse —

[246]

curiosity, greed, reckless despair — had driven her here that she might threaten him thus!

‘Ah, I dare say you think I’ve had a gay life of it over there with your money,’ she went on, not allowing him to speak. ‘*My God!*’

She shrugged her shoulders, with a scornful laugh, while the tempest gathered within her.

‘Don’t I know perfectly that for years I have been one of the most beautiful women in Paris! Ask the men who have painted me for the Salon — ask that brute who might have made a fortune out of me if he hadn’t been the sot he is! And what have I got by it? What do other women who are not a tenth part as good-looking as I am get by it? A comfortable life, anyway! *Eh bien! Essayons! — nous aussi.*’

The look she flung at him choked the words on his lips.

‘When I think of these ten years,’ she cried, ‘I just wonder at myself. There, — what you think about it I don’t know, and I don’t care. I might have had a good time, and I’ve had a *devil’s* time. And, upon my word, I think I’ll make a change!’

In her wild excitement she sprang up and began to pace the narrow room.

David watched her, fighting with himself, and with that inbred antipathy of temperament which seemed to paralyse both will and judgment. Was the secret of it that in their profound unlikeness they were yet so much alike?

[247]

Then he went up to her and made her sit down again.

‘Let me have a word now,’ he said quietly, though his hand as it gripped hers had a force of which he was unconscious. ‘You say you wonder at yourself. Well, I can tell you this: other people have wondered too! When I left you in Paris ten years ago, I tell you frankly, I had no hopes. I said to myself — don’t rage at me! — with that way of looking at things, and with such a husband, what chance is there? And for some years now, Louie, I confess to you, I have been simply humbled and amazed to see what — what’ — his voice sank and shook — ‘*love — and the fear of God* — can do. It has been hard to be miserable and poor — I know that — but you have cared for Cecile, and you have feared to shut yourself out from good people who spoke to you in God’s name. Don’t do yourself injustice. Believe in yourself. Look back upon these years and be thankful. With all their miseries they have been a kind of victory! Will you throw them away *now*? But your child is growing up and will understand. And there are hands to help — mine, always — always.’

He held out his to her, smiling. He could not have analysed his own impulse — this strange impulse which had led him to bless instead of cursing. But its effect upon Louie was startling. She had looked for, perhaps in her fighting mood she had ardently desired, an out- burst of condemnation, against which her mad pleasure in the sound of her own woes and hatreds might once

[248]

more spend itself. And instead of blaming and reproaching he had

She stared at him. Then with a sudden giving way, which was a matter partly of nerves and partly of surprise, she let her two arms fall upon the edge of the chair, and dropping her head upon them, burst out into wild sobbing.

His own eyes were wet. He soothed her hurriedly and incoherently, told her he would spare her all the money he could; that he and Lucy would do their best, but that she must not suppose they were very rich. He did not regard all his money as his own.

He went on to explain to her something of his business position. Her sobbing slackened and ceased. And presently, his mood changing instinctively with hers, he became more vague and cautious in statement; his tone veered back towards that which he was accustomed to use to her. For, once her burst of passion over, he felt immediately that she was once more criticising everything that he said and did in her own interest.

‘Oh, I know you’ve become a regular Communist,’ she said sullenly at last, drying her eyes in haste. ‘Well, I tell you, I must have a hundred pounds. I can’t do with a penny less than that.’

He tried to get out of her for what precise purposes she wanted it, and whether her husband had stolen from her the whole of the quarter’s allowance he had just sent her. She answered evasively; he felt that she

[249]

was telling him falsehoods; and once more his heart grew dry within him.

‘Well,’ he said at last with a certain decision, ‘I will do it if I can, and I think I can do it. But, Louie, understand that I have got Lucy and the child to think for, that I am not alone.’

‘I should think *she* had got more than she could expect!’ cried Louie, putting her hair straight with trembling hands.

His cheek flushed at the sneer, but before he could reply she said abruptly:

‘Have you ever told her about Paris?’

‘No,’ he said, with equal abruptness, his mouth taking a stern line, ‘and unless I am forced to do so I never shall. That you understand, I know, for I spoke to you about it in Paris. My past died for me when I asked Lucy to be my wife. I do not ask you to remember this. I take it for granted.’

‘I saw that woman the other day,’ said Louie with a strange smile, as she sat staring into the fire.

He started, but he did not reply. He went to straighten some papers on his table. It seemed to him that he did not want her to say a word more, and yet he listened for it.

‘I remember they used to call her pretty,’ said Louie, a hateful scorn shining in her still reddened eyes. ‘She is just a little frump now — nobody would ever look at her twice. They say her husband leads her a life. He poisoned himself at an operation and

[250]

has gone half crippled. She has to keep them both. She doesn’t give herself the airs she used to, anyway.’

David could bear it no longer.

‘I think you had better go and take Cecile to bed,’ he said peremptorily. ‘I heard it strike nine a few minutes ago. I will go and talk business to Lucy.’

She went with a careless air. As he saw her shut the door his heart felt once more dead and heavy. A few minutes before there had been the flutter of a divine presence between them. Now he felt nothing but the iron grip of character and life. And that little picture which her last words had left upon the mind — it carried with it a shock and dreariness he could only escape by hard work, that best medicine of the soul.

He went out early next morning to his printing-office, spent himself passionately upon a day of difficulties, and came back refreshed.

For the rest, he talked to Lucy, and with great difficulty persuaded her in the matter of the hundred pounds. Lucy's indignation may be taken for granted, and the angry proofs she heaped on David that Louie was an extravagant story-telling hussy, who spent every-thing she could get on dress and personal luxury.

'Why, her dressing-table is like a perfumer's shop!' she cried in her wrath; 'what she does with all the messes I can't imagine — makes herself beautiful, I suppose! Why should we pay for it all? And I tell you she has got a necklace of real pearls. I know they are

[251]

real, for she told Lizzie' (Lizzie was the boy's nurse) 'that she always took them about with her to keep them safe out of her husband's clutches — just imagine her talking to the girl like that ! When will you be able to give me real pearls, and where do you suppose she got them?'

David preferred not to inquire. What could he do, he asked himself in despair — what even could he know, unless Louie chose that he should know it? But she, on the contrary, carefully avoided the least recurrence to the threats of her first talk with him.

Ultimately, however, he brought his wife round, and Louie was informed that she could have her hundred pounds, which should be paid her on the day of her departure, but that nothing more, beyond her allowance, could or should be given her during the current year.

She took the promise very coolly, but certainly made herself more agreeable after it was given. She dressed up Cecile and set her dancing in the evenings, weird dances of a Spanish type, alternating between languor and a sort of 'possession,' which had been taught the child by a moustached violinist from Madrid, who admired her mother and paid Louie a fantastic and stormy homage through her child. She also condescended to take an interest in Lucy's wardrobe. The mingled temper and avidity

with which Lucy received her advances may be imagined. It made her mad to have it constantly implied that her gowns and bonnets would not be worn by a maid-of-all-work in Paris. At

[252]

the same time, when Louie's fingers had been busy with them it was as plain to her as to anyone else that they became her twice as well as they had before. So she submitted to be pinned and pulled about and tried on, keeping as much as possible on her dignity all the time, and reddening with fresh wrath each time that Louie made it plain to her that she thought her sister-in-law a provincial little fool, and was only troubling herself about her to pass the time.

Dora, of course, came up to see Louie, and Louie was much more communicative to her than to either Lucy or David. She told stories of her husband which made Dora's hair stand on end; but she boasted in great detail of her friendships with certain Legitimist ladies of the bluest blood, with one of whom she had just held a *quête* for some Catholic object on the stairs of the Salon. 'I was in blue and pink with a little silver,' she said, looking quickly behind her to see that Lucy was not listening. 'And Cecile was a fairy, with spangled wings — the sweetest thing you ever saw. We were both in the illustrated papers the week after, but as nobody took any notice of Madame de C — she has behaved like a washerwoman to me ever since. As if I could help her complexion or her age!'

But above all did she boast herself against Dora in Church matters. She would go to St. Damian's on Sunday, triumphantly announcing that she should have to confess it as a sin when she got home, and afterwards, when Dora, as her custom was, came out to early

[253]

dinner with the Grieves, Louie could not contain herself on the subject of the dresses, the processions, the decorations, the flowers, and ceremonial trappings in general, with which *she* might, if she liked, regale herself either at Ste. Eulalie or the Madeleine, in comparison with the wretched show offered by St. Damian's. Dora, after an early service and much Sunday school, sat looking pale and weary under the scornful information poured out upon her. She was outraged by Louie's tone; yet she was stung by her contempt. Once her gentleness was roused to speech, and she endeavoured to give some of the reasons for rejecting the usurped authority of the 'Bishop of Rome,' in which she had been drilled at different times. But she floundered and came to grief. Her adversary laughed at her, and in the intervals of rating Cecile for having inked her dress, flaunted some shrill controversy which left them all staring. Louie vindicating the claims of the Holy See with much unction and an appropriate diction! It seemed to David, as he listened, that the irony of life could hardly be carried further.

On the following day, David, not without a certain consciousness, said to John Dalby, his faithful helper through many years, and of late his partner:

'My sister is up at our place, John, with her little girl. Lucy would be very glad if you would go in this evening to see them.'

John, who was already aware of the advent of Madame Montjoie, accepted the invitation and went.

[254]

Louie received him with a manner half mocking — half patronising — and made no effort whatever to be agreeable to him. She was preoccupied; and the stout, shy-man in his new suit only bored her. As for him, he sat and watched her; his small, amazed eyes took in her ways with Cecile, alternately boastful and tyrannical; her airs towards Lucy; her complete indifference to her brother's life and interests. When he got up to go, he took leave of her with all the old timid gaucherie. But if, when he entered the room, there had been anything left in his mind of the old dream, he was a wholly free man when he recrossed the threshold. He walked home thinking much of a small solicitor's

daughter, who worshipped at the Congregational chapel he himself attended. He had been at David Grieve's side all these years; he loved him probably more than he would now love any woman; he devoted himself with ardour to the printing and selling of the various heretical works and newspapers published by Grieve & Co.; and yet for some long time past he had been — and was likely to remain — a man of strong religious convictions, of a common Evangelical type.

The second week of Louie's stay was a much greater trial than the first to all concerned. She grew tired of dressing and patronising Lucy; her sharp eyes and tongue found out all her sister-in-law's weak points; the two children were a fruitful source of jarring and jealousy between the mothers; and by the end of the week their relation was so much strained, and David

[255]

had so much difficulty in keeping the peace, that he could only pine for the Monday morning which was to see Louie's departure. Meanwhile nothing occurred to give him back his momentary hold upon her. She took great care not to be alone with him. It was as though she felt the presence of a new force in him, and would give it no chance of affecting her in mysterious and incalculable ways.

On the Saturday before her last Sunday, Reuben Grieve arrived in Manchester — with his wife. His nephew's letter and invitation had thrown the old man into a great flutter. Ultimately his curiosity as to David's home and child — David himself he had seen several times since the marriage — and the desire, which the more prosperous state of his own circumstances allowed him to feel, to see what Louie might be like after all these years — decided him to go. And when he told Hannah of his intended journey, he found, to his amazement, that she was minded to go too. 'If yo'll tell me when yo gan me a jaunt last, I'll be obliged to yo!' she said sourly, and he at once felt himself a selfish brute that he should have thought of taking the little pleasure without her.

When they were seated in the railway-carriage, he broke out in a sudden excitement :

‘Wal, I never thowt, Hannah, to see yo do thissens naw moor!’

‘Aye, yo wor allus yan to mak t’warst o’things, ‘ she said to him, as she slowly settled herself in her corner,

[256]

Nevertheless, Reuben’s feeling was amply justified. It had been a resurrection. The clever young doctor, brimful of new methods, who had brought her round, had arrived just in time to stop the process of physical deterioration before it had gone too far; and the recovery of power both on the paralysed side and in general health had been marvellous. She walked with a stick, and was an old and blanched woman before her time. But her indomitable spirit was once more provided with its necessary means of expression. She was at least as rude as ever, and it was as clear as anything can be in the case of a woman who has never learnt to smile, that her visit to Manchester — the first for ten years — was an excitement and satisfaction to her.

David met them at the station; but Reuben persisted in going to an old-fashioned eating-house in the centre of the city, where he had been accustomed to stay on the occasion of his rare visits to Manchester, in spite of his nephew’s repeated offers of hospitality.

‘Noa, Davy, noa,’ he said, ‘yo’re a gen’leman now, and yo conno be moidered wi’ oos. We’st coom an see yo — thank yo kindly, — bit we’st do for oursels i’ th’ sleepin’ way.’

To which Hannah gave a grim and energetic assent.

When Louie had been told of their expected arrival she opened her black eyes to their very widest extent.

‘Well, you’d better keep Aunt Hannah and me out of each other’s way,’ she remarked briefly. ‘I shall

[257]

let her have it, you'll see. I'm bound to.' A remark that David did his best to forget, seeing that the encounter was now past averting.

When on Sunday afternoon the door of the Grieves's sitting-room opened to admit Hannah and Reuben Grieve, Louie was lying half asleep in an armchair by the fire, Cecile and Sandy were playing with bricks in the middle of the floor, and Dora and Lucy were chatting on the sofa.

Lucy, who had seen Reuben before, but had never set eyes on Hannah, sprang up ill at ease and awkward, but genuinely anxious to behave nicely to her husband's relations.

'Won't you take a chair? I'll go and call David. He's in the next room. This is Miss Lomax. Louie!'

Startled by the somewhat sharp call, Louie sat up and rubbed her eyes.

Hannah, resting on her stick, was standing in the middle of the floor. At sight of the familiar tyrannous face, grown parchment-white in place of its old grey hue — of the tall gaunt figure robed in the Sunday garb of rusty black which Louie perfectly remembered, and surmounted by the old head gear — the stiff frizzled curls held in place by two small combs on the temples, the black bandeau across the front of the head, and the towering bonnet — Louie suddenly flushed and rose.

'How do you do?' she said in a cool off-hand way, holding out her hand, which Hannah's black cotton

[258]

glove barely touched. 'Well, Uncle Reuben, do you think I'm grown? I have had about time to, anyway, since you saw me. That's my little girl.'

With a patronising smile she pushed forward Cecile. The short-sighted tremulous Reuben, staring uncomfortably about him at the town splendours in which 'Davy' lived, had to have the child's hand put into his by Dora before he could pull himself together enough to respond.

‘I’m glad to see tha, my little dear,’ he said, awkwardly dropping his hat and umbrella, as he stooped to salute her. ‘I’m sure yo’re varra kind, miss’ — this was said apologetically to Dora, who had picked up his belongings and put them on a chair. ‘Wal, Louie, she doan’t feature her mither mich, as I can see.’

He looked hurriedly at his wife for confirmation. Hannah, who had seated herself on the highest and plainest chair she could find, stared the child up and down, and then slowly removed her eyes, saying nothing. Instantly her manner woke the old rage in Louie, who was observing her excitedly.

‘Come here to me, Cecile. I’d be sorry, anyway, if you were like what your mother was at your age. You’d be a poor, ill-treated, half-starved little wretch if you were!’

Hannah started, but not unpleasantly. Her grim mouth curved with a sort of satisfaction. It was many years since she had enjoyed those opportunities for battle which Louie’s tempers had once so freely afforded her.

[259]

‘She’s nobbut a midge,’ she remarked audibly to Dora, who had just tried to propitiate her by a footstool. ‘The chilt looks as thoo she’d been fed on spiders or frogs, or summat o’ that soart.’

At this moment David came in, just in time to prevent another explosion from Louie. He was genuinely glad to see his guests; his feeling of kinship was much stronger now than it ever had been in his youth; and in these years of independent, and on the whole happy, living he had had time to forget even Hannah’s enormities.

‘Well, have you got a comfortable inn?’ he asked Reuben presently, when some preliminaries were over.

‘I thank yo kindly, Davy,’ said Reuben cautiously, ‘we’re meeterly weel sarved; bit yo conno look for mich fro teawn folk.’

‘What are yo allus so mealy-mouthed for?’ said his wife indignantly. ‘Why conno yo say reet out at it’s a pleeace not fit for ony decent dog to put his head in, an’

an ill-mannert daggel-tail of a woman to keep it, as I'd like to sweep out wi th' bits of a morning, an' leave her on th' muck-heap wheer she belongs?'

David laughed. To an ear long accustomed to the monotony of town civilities there was a not unwelcome savour of the moors even in these brutalities of Hannah's.

'Sandy, where are you?' he said, looking round. 'Have you had a look at him. Aunt Hannah?'

Sandy, who was sitting in the midst of his bricks

[260]

sucking his thumb patiently till Cecile should be given back to him by her mother, and these invaders should be somehow dispersed, looked up and gave his father a sleepy and significant nod, as much as to say, 'Leave me alone, and turn these people out.'

But David lifted him up, and carried him off for exhibition.

Hannah looked at him, as he lay lazily back on his father's arm, his fair curls straying over David's coat, his cheek flushed by the heat. 'Aye, he's a gradely little chap,' she said, more graciously it seemed to David than he ever remembered to have heard Hannah Grieve speak before. His paternal vanity was instantly delighted.

'Sit up, Sandy, and tell your great-uncle and aunt about the fine games you've been having with your cousin.'

But Sandy was lost in quite other reflections. He looked out upon Hannah and Reuben with grave filmy eyes, as though from a vast distance, and said absently:

'Daddy!'

'Yes, Sandy, speak up.'

'Daddy, when everybody in the world was babies, who put 'em to bed?'

The child spoke as usual with a slow flute-like articulation, so that every word could be heard. Reuben and Hannah turned and looked at each other.

'Lord alive!' cried Hannah, 'whativer put sich notions into th' chilt's yed?'

[261]

David, with a happy twinkle in his eye, held up a hand for silence.

‘I don’t know, Sandy; give it up.’

Sandy considered a second or two, then said, with the sigh of one who relinquishes speculation in favour of the conventional solution:

‘I s’pose God did.’

His tone was dejected, as though he would gladly have come to another conclusion if he could.

‘Reuben,’ said Hannah with severity, ‘hand me that sugar-stick.’

Reuben groped in his pockets for the barley-sugar, which, in spite of Hannah’s scoffs, he had bought in Market Street the evening before, ‘for t’ childer.’ He watched his wife in gaping astonishment as he saw her approaching Sandy, with blandishments which, rough and clumsy as they were, had nevertheless the effect of beguiling that young man on to the lap where barley-sugar was to be had. Hannah fed him triumphantly, making loud remarks on his beauty and cleverness.

Meanwhile Louie stood on the other side of the fire, holding Cecile close against her, with a tight defiant grip — her lip twitching contemptuously. David, always sensitively alive to her presence and her moods, insisted in the midst of Sandy’s feast that Cecile should have her share. Sandy held out the barley-sugar following it with wistful eyes. Louie beat down Cecile’s grasping hand. ‘You shan’t spoil your tea —

[262]

you’ll be sick with that stuff!’ she said imperiously. Hannah turned, and brought a slow venomous scrutiny to bear upon her niece — on the slim tall figure in the elegant Parisian dress, the daintily curled and frizzled head, the wild angry eyes. Then she withdrew her glance, contented. Louie’s evident jealousy appeased her. She had come to Manchester with one fixed determination — not to be ‘talked foine to by that hizzy.’

At this juncture tea made its appearance, Lucy having some time ago given up the sit-down tea in the dining-room, which was the natural custom of her class, as not

genteel. She seated herself nervously to pour it out. Hannah had at the very beginning put her down ‘as a middlin’ soart o’ person,’ and vouchsafed her very little notice.

‘Auntie Dora! auntie Dora!’ cried Sandy, escaping from Hannah’s knee, ‘I’m coming to sit by zoo.’

And as soon as he had got comfortably into her pocket, he pulled her head down and whispered to her, his thoughts running as before in the theological groove, ‘Auntie Dora, God made me — and God made Cecile — *did* God make that one?’

And he nodded across at Hannah, huddling himself together meanwhile in a paroxysm of glee and mischief. He was excited by the flatteries he had been receiving, and Dora, thankful to see that Hannah had heard nothing, could only quiet him by copious supplies of bread and butter.

David wooed Cecile to sit on a stool beside him,

[263]

and things went smoothly for a time, though Hannah made it clearly evident that this was not the kind of tea she had expected, and that she ‘didn’t howd wi’ new-fangled ways o’ takkin’ your vittles.’ Reuben did his best to cover and neutralise her remarks by gossip to David about the farm and the valley. ‘Eh — it’s been nobbut *raggy* weather up o’ the moors this winter, Davy, an’ a great lot o’ sheep lost. Nobbut twothrey o’ mine, I thank th’ Lord.’ But in the midst of a most unflattering account of the later morals and development of the Wigson family, Reuben stopped dead shorty with a stare at the door.

‘Wal, aa niver! — their’s Mr. Ancrum hissel’, — I do uphowd yo!’

And the old man rose with effusion, his queer eyes and face beaming and blinking with a light of affectionate memory, for Ancrum stood in the doorway, smiling a mute inquiry at Lucy as to whether he might come in. David sprang up to bring him into the circle. Hannah held out an ungracious hand. Never, all these years, had she forgiven the ex-minister those representations he had once made on the subject of David’s ‘prenticing.

Then the new-comer sat down by Reuben cheerily, parrying the farmer's concern about his altered looks, and watching Louie, who had thrown him a careless word in answer to his greeting. Dora, who had come to know him well, and to feel much of the affectionate reverence for him that David did, in spite of some

[264]

bewilderment as to his religious position, went round presently to talk to him, and Sandy as it happened was left on his stool for a minute or two forgotten. He asked his mother plaintively for cake, and she did not hear him. Meanwhile Cecile had cake, and he followed her eating of it with resentful eyes.

'Come here, Cecile,' said David, 'and hold the cake while I cut it; there's a useful child.'

He handed a piece to Reuben, and then put the next into Cecile's hand.

'Ready for some more, little woman?'

Cecile in a furtive squirrel-like way seized the piece and was retiring with it, when Sandy, beside himself, jumped from his stool, rushed at his cousin and beat her wildly with his small fists.

'Yo're a geedy thing —a geedy 'gustin' thing!' he cried, sobbing partly because he wanted the cake, still more because, after his exaltation on Hannah's knee, he had been so unaccountably neglected. To see Cecile battenning on a second piece while he was denied a first was more than could be borne.

'You little viper, you!' exclaimed Louie, and springing up, she swept across to Sandy, and boxed his ears smartly, just as she was accustomed to box Cecile's, whenever the fancy took her.

The child raised a piercing cry, and David caught him up.

'Give him to me, David, give him to me,' cried Lucy, who had almost upset the tea-table in her rush

[265]

to her child. 'I'll see whether that sister of yours shall beat and abuse my boy in my own house! Oh, she may beat her own child as much as she pleases, she does it all day long! If she were a poor person she would be had up.'

Her face glowed with passion. The exasperation of many days spoke in her outburst. David, himself trembling with anger, in vain tried to quiet her and Sandy.

'Ay, I reckon she maks it hot wark for them at ha to live wi' her,' said Hannah audibly, looking round on the scene with a certain enjoyment which contrasted with the panic and distress of the rest.

Louie, who was holding Cecile — also in tears — in her arms, swept her fierce, contemptuous gaze from Lucy to her ancient enemy.

'You must be putting in your word, must you? — you old toad, you — you that robbed us of our money till *your* own husband was ashamed of you!'

And, totally regardless of the presence of Dora and Ancrum, and of the efforts made to silence her by Dora or by the flushed and unhappy Reuben, she descended on her foe. She flung charge after charge in Hannah's face, showing the minutest and most vindictive memory for all the sordid miseries of her childhood; and then when her passion had spent itself on her aunt, she returned to Lucy, exulting in the sobs and the excitement she had produced. In vain did David try either to silence her or to take Lucy away. Nothing but

[266]

violence could have stopped the sister's tongue; his wife, under a sort of fascination of terror and rage, would not move. Flinging all thoughts of her dependence on David — of the money she had come to ask — of her leave-taking on the morrow — to the winds, Louie revenged herself amply for her week's unnatural self-control, and gave full rein to a mad propensity which had been gradually roused and spurred to ungovernable force by the trivial incidents of the afternoon. She made mock of Lucy's personal vanity; she sneered at her attempts to ape her betters, shrilly declaring that no one would ever take

her for anything else than what she was, the daughter of a vulgar cheese-paring old hypocrite; and, finally, she attacked Sandy as a nasty, greedy, abominable little monkey, not fit to associate with her child, and badly in want of the stick.

Then slowly she retreated to the door out of breath, the wild lightnings of her eyes flashing on them still. David was holding the hysterical Lucy, while Dora was trying to quiet Sandy. Otherwise a profound silence had fallen on them all, a silence which seemed but to kindle Louie's fury the more.

'Ah, you think you've got him in your power, him and his money, you little white-livered cat!' she cried, standing in the doorway, and fixing Lucy with a look beneath which her sister-in-law quailed, and hid her face on David's arm. 'You think you'll stop him giving it to them that have a right to look to him? Perhaps you'd better look out; perhaps there are people

[267]

who know more about him than you. Do you think he would ever have looked at you, you little powsement, if he hadn't been taken on the rebound?'

She gave a mad laugh as she flung out the old Derbyshire word of abuse, and stood defying them, David and all. David strode forward and shut the door upon her. Then he went tenderly up to his wife, and took her and Sandy into the library.

The sound of Cecile's wails could be heard in the distance. The frightened Reuben turned and looked at his wife. She had grown paler even than before, but her eyes were all alive.

'A racklesome, natterin' creetur as ivir I seed,' she said calmly; 'I allus telt tha, Reuben Grieve, what hoo'd coom to. It's bred in her — that's yan thing to be hodden i' mind. But I'll shift her in double quick-sticks if she ever cooms meddlin' i' my house, Reuben Grieve — soa yo know.'

'She oughtn't to stay here,' said Ancrum in a quick undertone to Dora; 'she might do that mother and child a mischief.'

Dora sat absorbed in her pity for David, in her passionate sympathy for this home that was as her own.

‘She is going to-morrow, thank God!’ she said with a long breath; ‘oh, what an awful woman!’

Ancrum looked at her with a little sad smile.

‘Whom are you sorry for?’ he asked. ‘Those two in there?’ and he nodded towards the library. ‘Think again. Miss Dora. There is one face that will haunt me

[268]

whenever I think of this — the face of that French child.’

All the afternoon visitors dispersed. The hours passed. Lucy, worn out, had gone to bed with a crying which seemed to have in it some new and heavy element she would not speak of, even to David. The evening meal came, and there was no sign or sound from that room upstairs where Louie had locked herself in.

David stood by the fire in the dining-room, his lips sternly set. He had despatched a servant to Louie’s door with an offer to send up food for her and Cecile. But the girl had got no answer. Was he bound to go — bound to bring about the possible renewal of a degrading scene?

At this moment Lizzie, the little nurse, tapped at the door.

‘If you please, sir ‘

‘Yes. Anything wrong with Master Sandy?’

David went to the door in a tremor. ‘He won’t go to sleep, sir. He wants you, and I’m afraid he’ll disturb mistress again.’

David ran upstairs.

‘Sandy, what do you want?’

Sandy was crying violently, far down under the bed-clothes. When David drew him out, he was found to be grasping a piece of crumbling cake, sticky with tears.

[269]

‘It’s Cecile’s cake,’ he sobbed into his father’s ear: ‘I want to give it her.’

And in fact, after his onslaught upon her, Cecile had dropped the offending cake, which he had instantly picked up the moment before Louie struck him. He had held it tight gripped ever since, and repentance was busy in his small heart.

David thought a moment.

‘Come with me, Sandy,’ he said at last, and, wrapping up the child in an old shawl that hung near, he carried him off to Louie’s door. ‘Louie!’ he called, after his knock, in a low voice, for he was uncomfortably aware that his household was on the watch for developments.

For a while there was no answer. Sandy, absorbed in the interest of the situation, clung close to his father and stopped crying.

At last Louie suddenly flung the door wide open.

‘What do you want?’ she said defiantly, with the gesture and bearing of a tragic actress. She was, however, deadly white, and David, looking past her, saw that Cecile was lying wide awake in her little bed.

‘Sandy wants to give Cecile her cake,’ he said quietly, ‘and to tell her that he is sorry for striking her.’

He carried his boy up to Cecile. A smile flashed over the child’s worn face. She held out her little arms. David, infinitely touched, laid down Sandy, and the children crooned together on the same pillow he

[270]

trying to stuff the cake into Cecile’s mouth, she gently refusing.

‘She’s ill,’ said Louie abruptly, ‘she’s feverish — I want a doctor.’

‘We can get one directly,’ he said. ‘Will you come down and have some food? Lucy has gone to bed. If Lizzie comes and sits by the children, perhaps they will go to sleep. I can carry Sandy back later.’

Louie paused irresolutely. Then she went up to the bed, knelt down by it, and took Cecile in her arms.

‘You can take him away,’ she said, pointing to Sandy. ‘I will put her to sleep. Don’t you send me anything to eat. I want a doctor. And if you won’t order a fly for me at twenty minutes to nine to-morrow, I will go out myself, that’s all.’

‘Louie!’ he cried, holding out his hand to her in despair, ‘why will you treat us in this way — what have we done to you?’

‘Never you mind,’ she said sullenly, gathering the child to her and confronting him with steady eyes. There was a certain magnificence in their wide unconscious despair — in this one fierce passion.

She and Lucy did not meet again. In the morning David paid her her hundred pounds, and took her and Cecile to the station, a doctor having seen the child the night before, and prescribed medicine, which had given her a quiet night. Louie barely thanked him for the money. She was almost silent and still very pale.

[271]

Just before they parted, the thought of the tyranny of such a nature, of the life to which she was going back, wrung the brother’s heart. The outrage of the day before dropped from his mind as of no account, effaced by sterner realities.

‘Write to me, Louie!’ he said to her just as the train was moving off; ‘I could always come if there was trouble — or Dora.’

She did not answer, and her hand dropped from his. But he remembered afterwards that her eyes were fixed upon him, as long as the train was in sight, and the picture of her dark possessed look will be with him to the end.

[272]

IT was a warm April Sunday. Lucy and Dora were pacing up and down in the garden, and Lucy was talking in a quick, low voice.

‘Oh! there was something, Dora. You know as well as I do there was something. That awful woman didn’t say that for nothing. I suppose he’d tell me if I asked him.’

‘Then why don’t you ask him?’ said Dora, with a little frown.

Lucy gathered a sprig of budding lilac, and restlessly stripped off its young green.

‘It isn’t very pleasant,’ she said at last, slowly. ‘I dare say it’s silly to expect your husband never to have looked at anybody else ——’

She paused again, unable to explain herself. Dora glanced at her, and was somewhat struck by her thin and worn appearance. She had often, moreover, seemed to her cousin to be fretting during these last weeks. Not that there was much difference in her ways with David and Sandy. But her small vanities, prejudices, and passions were certainly less apparent of late; she

[273]

ordered her two servants about less; she was less interested in her clothes, less eager for social amusement. It was as though something clouding and dulling had passed over a personality which was naturally restless and vivacious.

Yet it was only to-day, in the course of some conversation about Louie, of whom nothing had been heard since her departure, that Lucy had for the first time broken silence on the subject of those insolent words of her sister-in-law, which Ancrum and Dora had listened to with painful shock, while to Reuben and Hannah, pre-occupied with their own long-matured ideas of Louie, they had been the mere froth of a venomous tongue.

‘Why didn’t you ask him about it at first — just after?’ Dora resumed.

‘I didn’t want to,’ said Lucy, after a minute, and then would say no more. But she walked along, thinking, unhappily, of the moment when David had taken her into

the library to be out of the sound of Louie's rage; of her angry desire to ask him questions, checked by a childish fear she could not analyse, as to what the answers might be; of his troubled, stormy face; and of the tender ways by which he tried to calm and comfort her. It had seemed to her that once or twice he had been on the point of saying something grave and unusual, but in the end he had refrained. Louie had gone away; their everyday life had begun again; he had been very full, in the intervals of his hard daily business,

[274]

of the rebuilding of the James Street court, and of the apprentices' school; and, led by a variety of impulses — by a sense of jeopardised possession and a conscience speaking with new emphasis and authority — she had taken care that he should talk to her about both; she had haunted him in the library, and her presence there, once the signal of antagonism and dispute, had ceased to have any such meaning for him. Her sympathy was not very intelligent, and there was at times a childish note of sulkiness and reluctance in it; she was extremely ready to say, 'I told you so,' if anything went wrong; but, nevertheless, there was a tacit renunciation at the root of her new manner to him which he perfectly understood, and rewarded in his own ardent, affectionate way.

As she sauntered along in this pale gleam of sun, now drinking in the soft April wind, now stooping to look at the few clumps of crocuses and daffodils which were pushing through the blackened earth, Lucy had once more a vague sense that her life this spring — this past year — had been hard. It was like the feeling of one who first realises the intensity of some long effort or struggle in looking back upon it. Her little life had been breathed into by a divine breath, and growth, expansion, had brought a pain and discontent she had never known before.

Dora meanwhile had her own thoughts. She was lost in memories of that first talk of hers with David Grieve after his return from Paris, with the marks of

[275]

his fierce, mysterious grief fresh upon him; then, pursuing her recollection of him through the years, she came to a point of feeling where she said, with sudden energy, throwing her arm round Lucy, and taking up the thread of their conversation: —

‘I wouldn’t let what Louie said worry you a bit, Lucy. Of course, she wanted to make mischief; but you know, and I know, what sort of a man David has been since you and he were married. That’ll be enough for you, I should think.’

Lucy flushed. She had once possessed very little reticence, and had been quite ready to talk her husband over, any day and all day, with Dora. But now, though she would begin in the old way, there soon came a point when something tied her tongue.

This time she attacked the lilac-bushes again with a restless hand.

‘Why, I thought you were shocked at his opinions,’ she said, proudly.

Dora sighed. Her conscience had not waited for Lucy’s remark to make her aware of the constant perplexity between authority and natural feeling into which David’s ideals were perpetually throwing her.

‘They make one very sad,’ she said, looking away. ‘But we must believe that God, who sees everything, judges as we cannot do.’

Lucy fired up at once. It annoyed her to have Dora making spiritual allowance for David in this way.

[276]

‘I don’t believe God wants anything but that people should be good,’ she said. ‘I am sure there are lots of things like that in the New Testament.’

Dora shook her head slowly. ‘“He that hath not the Son, hath not life,” ’ she said under her breath, a sudden passion leaping to her eye.

Lucy looked at her indignantly. ‘I don’t agree with you, Dora — there! And it all depends on what things mean.’

‘The meaning is quite plain,’ said Dora, with rigid persistence. ‘Lucy, don’t be led away. I missed you at early service this morning.’

The look she threw her cousin melted into a pathetic and heavenly reproach.

‘Well, I know,’ said Lucy, ungraciously, ‘I was tired. I don’t know what’s wrong with me these last weeks; I can’t get up in the morning.’

Dora only looked grieved. Lucy understood that her plea seemed to her cousin too trivial and sinful to be noticed.

‘Oh! I dare say I’d go,’ she said in her own mind, defiantly, ‘if *he* went.’

Aloud, she said: —

‘Dora, just look at this cheek of mine; I can’t think what the swelling is.’

And she turned her right cheek to Dora, pointing to a lump, not discoloured, but rather large, above the cheek-bone. Dora stopped, and looked at it carefully.

[277]

‘Yes, I had noticed it,’ she said. ‘It is odd. Can’t you account for it in any way?’

‘No. It’s been coming some little while. David says I must ask Dr. Mildmay about it. I don’t think I shall. It ‘11 go away. Oh! there they are.’

As she spoke, David and Sandy, who had been out for a Sunday walk together, appeared on the steps of the garden-door. David waved his hat to his wife, an example immediately followed by Sandy, who twisted his Scotch cap madly, and then set off running to her.

Lucy looked at them both with a sudden softening and brightening which gave her charm. David came up to her, ran his arm through hers, and began to give her a laughing account of Sandy’s behaviour. The April wind had flushed him, tumbled his black hair, and called up spring lights in the eyes, which had been somewhat dimmed by overmuch sedentary work and a too small allowance of sleep. His plenitude of virile energy, the glow of health and power which hung round him this afternoon, did but make Lucy seem more languid and faded as she hung upon him, smiling at his stories of their walk and of Sandy’s antics.

He broke off in the middle, and looked at her anxiously.

‘She isn’t the thing, is she, Dora? I believe she wants a change.’

‘Oh! thank you!’ cried Lucy, ironically — ‘with all Sandy’s spring things and my own to look to, and some

[278]

new shirts to get for you, and the spring cleaning to see to. Much obliged to you.’

‘All those things, madam,’ said David, patting her hand, ‘wouldn’t matter twopence, if it should please your lord and master to order you off. And if this fine weather goes on, you’ll have to take advantage of it. By the way, I met Mildmay, and asked him to come in and see you.’

Lucy reddened.

‘Why, there’s nothing,’ she said, pettishly. ‘This ’ll go away directly.’ Instinctively she put up her hand to her cheek.

‘Oh! Mildmay won’t worry you,’ said David; ‘he’ll tell you what’s wrong at once. You know you like him.’

‘Well, I must go,’ said Dora.

They understood that she had a mill-girls’ Bible class at half-past five, and an evening service an hour later, so they did not press her to stay. Lucy kissed her, and Sandy escorted her half-way to the garden-door, giving her a breathless and magniloquent account of the ‘hy’nas and kangawoos ‘she might expect to find congregated in the Merton Road outside. Dora, who was somewhat distressed by his powers of imaginative fiction, would not ‘play up ‘as his father did, and he left her half-way to run back to David, who was always ready to turn road and back garden into ‘Africa country’ at a moment’s notice, and people it to order with savages, elephants, boomerangs, kangaroos, and

[279]

all other possible or impossible things that Sandy might chance to want.

Dora, looking back from the garden, saw them all three in a group together — Sandy tugging at his mother's skirts, and shouting at the top of his voice; David's curly black head bent over his wife, who was gathering her brown shawl round her throat, as though the light wind chilled her. But there was no chill in her look. That, for the moment, as she swayed between husband and child, had in it the qualities of the April sun — a brightness and promise all the more radiant by comparison with the winter or the cloud from which it had emerged.

Dora went home as quickly as tram car and fast walking could take her. She still lived in the same Ancoats rooms with her shirt-making friend, who had kept company, poor thing! for four years with a young man, and had then given him up with anguish because he was not 'the sort of man she'd been taking him for,' though no one but Dora had ever known what qualities or practices, intolerable to a pure mind, the sad phrase covered. Dora might long ago have moved to more comfortable rooms and a better quarter of the town had she been so minded, for her wages as an admirable forewoman and an exceptionally skilled hand were high; but she passionately preferred to be near St. Damian's and amongst her 'girls.' Also, there was the thought that by staying in the place whither she had originally

[280]

moved she would be more easily discoverable if ever, — ay, if *ever* — Daddy should come back to her. She was certain that he was still alive; and great as the probabilities on the other side became with every passing year, few people had the heart to insist upon them in the face of her sensitive faith, whereof the bravery was so close akin to tears.

Only once in all these years had there been a trace of Daddy. Through a silk-merchant acquaintance of his, having relations with Lyons and other foreign centres, David had once come across a rumour which had seemed to promise a clue. He had himself gone across to Lyons at once, and had done all he could. But the clue broke in his hand, and the tanned, long-faced lunatic from Manchester, whereof report had

spoken, could be only doubtfully identified with a man who bore no likeness at all to Daddy.

Dora's expectation and hope had been stirred to their depths, and she bore her disappointment hardly. But she did not therefore cease to hope. Instinctively on this Sunday night, when she reached home, she put Daddy's chair, which had been pushed aside, in its right place by the fire, and she tenderly propped up a stuffed bird, originally shot by Daddy in the Vosges, and now vilely overtaken by Manchester moths. Then she set round chairs and books for her girls.

Soon they came trooping up the stairs, in their neat Sunday dresses, so sharply distinguished from the mill-gear of the week, and she spent with them a moving and

[281]

mystical hour. She was expounding to them a little handbook of 'The Blessed Sacrament,' and her explanations wound up with a close appeal to each one of them to make more use of the means of grace, to surrender themselves more fully to the awful and unspeakable mystery by which the Lord gave them His very flesh to eat. His very blood to drink, so fashioning within them. Communion after Communion, the immortal and incorruptible body which should be theirs in the Resurrection.

She spoke in a low, vibrating voice, somewhat monotonous in tone; her eyes shone with strange light under her round, prominent brow; all that she said of the joys of frequent Communion, of the mortal perils of unworthy participation, of treating the heavenly food lightly — coming to it, that is, unfasting and unprepared — of the need especially of Lenten self-denial, of giving up 'what each one of you likes best, so far as you can,' in preparation for the great Easter Eucharist — came evidently from the depths of her own intense conviction. Her girls listened to her with answering excitement and awe; one of them she had saved from drink, all of them had been her Sunday-school children for years, and many of them possessed, under the Lancashire exterior, the deep-lying poetry and emotion of the North.

When she dismissed them she hurried off to church, to sit once more dissolved in feeling, aspiration, penitence; to feel the thrill of the organ, the pathos of the bare altar, and the Lenten hymns.

[282]

After the service she had two or three things to settle with one of the curates and with some of her co-helpers in the good works of the congregation, so that when she reached home she was late and tired out. Her fellow-lodger was spending the Sunday with friends; there was no one to talk to her at her supper; and after supper she fell, sitting by the fire, into a mood of some flatness and reaction. She tried to read a religious book, but the religious nerve could respond no more, and other interests, save those of her daily occupations, she had none.

In Daddy's neighbourhood, what with his travels, his whims, and his quotations, there had been always something to stir the daughter's mind, even if it were only to reprobation. But since he had left her the circle of her thoughts had steadily and irrevocably narrowed. All secular knowledge, especially the reading of other than religious books, had become gradually and painfully identified, for her, with those sinister influences which made David Grieve an 'unbeliever,' and so many of the best Manchester workmen 'atheists.'

So now, in her physical and moral slackness, she sat and thought with some bitterness of a 'young woman' who had recently entered the shop which employed her, and, by dint of a clever tongue, was gaining the ear of the authorities, to the disturbance of some of Dora's cherished methods of distributing and organising the work. They might have trusted her

[283]

more after all these years; but nobody appreciated her; she counted for nothing.

Then her mind wandered on to the familiar grievances of Sandy's religious teaching and Lucy's gradual defection from St. Damian's. She must make more efforts with Lucy, even if it angered David. She looked back on what she had done to bring about the marriage, and lashed herself into a morbid sense of responsibility.

But her missionary projects were no more cheering to her than her thoughts about the shop and her work, and she felt an intense sense of relief when she heard the step of her room-mate, Mary Styles, upon the stairs. She made Mary go into every little incident of her day; she was insatiable for gossip — a very rare mood for her — and could not be chattered to enough.

And all through she leant her head against her father's chair, recalling Lucy on her husband's arm, and the child at her skirts, with the pathetic inarticulate longing which makes the tragedy of the single life. She could have loved so well, and no one had ever wished to make her his wife; the wound of it bled sometimes in her inmost heart.

Meanwhile, on this same April Sunday, Lucy, after Sandy was safe in bed, brought down some needlework to do beside David while he read. It was not very long since she had induced herself to make so great a breach in the Sunday habits of her youth. As soon as

[284]

David's ideals began to tease her out of thought and sympathy, his freedoms also began to affect her. She was no longer so much chilled by his strictness, or so much shocked by his laxity.

David had spoken of a busy evening. In reality, a lazy fit overtook him. He sat smoking, and turning over the pages of Eckermann's 'Conversations with Goethe.'

'What are you reading?' said Lucy at last, struck by his face of enjoyment. 'Why do you like it so much?'

‘Because there is no one else in the world who hits the right nail on the head so often as Goethe,’ he said, throwing himself back with a stretch of pleasure. ‘So wide a brain — so acute and sane a temper!’

Lucy looked a little lost, as she generally did when David made literary remarks to her. But she did not drop the subject.

‘You said something to Professor Madgwick the other day about a line of Goethe you used to like so when you were a boy. What did it mean?’

She flushed, as though she were venturing on some- thing which would make her ridiculous.

‘A line of Goethe?’ repeated David, pondering. ‘Oh! I know. Yes, it was a line from Goethe’s novel of " Werther." When I was young and foolish — when you and I were first acquainted, in fact, and you used to scold me for going to the Hall of Science! — I often

[285]

said this line to myself over and over. I didn’t know much German, but the swing of it carried me away.’

And, with a deep voice and rhythmic accent, he repeated: ‘*Handwerker trugen ihn; kein Geistlicher hat ihn begleitet.*’

‘What does it mean?’ said Lucy.

‘Well, it comes at the end of the story. The hero commits suicide for love, and Goethe says that at his burial, on the night after his death, “labouring men bore him; no priest went with him.” ’

He bent forward, clasping his hands tightly, with the half smiling, half dreamy look of one who recalls a bygone thrill of feeling, partly in sympathy, partly in irony.

‘Then he wasn’t a Christian?’ said Lucy, wondering. ‘Do you still hate priests so much, David?’

‘It doesn’t look like it, does it, madam,’ he said, laughing, ‘when you think of all my clergymen friends?’

And, in fact, as Lucy's mind pondered his answer, she easily remembered the readiness with which any of the clergy at St. Damian's would ask his help in sending away a sick child, or giving a man a fresh start in life, or setting the necessary authorities to work in the case of some moral or sanitary scandal. She thought also of various Dissenting ministers who called on him and corresponded with him; of his reverent affection for Canon Aylwin, for Ancrum.

'Well, any way, you care about the labouring men,'

[286]

she went on persistently. 'I suppose you're what father used to call a "canting Socialist"?'

'No,' said David, quietly — 'no, I'm not a Socialist, except' — and he smiled — 'in the sense in which some one said the other day, "we are all Socialists now."'

'Well, what does it mean?' said Lucy, threading another needle, and feeling a certain excitement in this prolonged mental effort.

David tried to explain to her the common Socialist ideal in simple terms — the hope of a millennium, when all the instruments of production shall be owned by the State, and when the surplus profit produced by labour, over and above the maintenance of the worker and the general cost of production, will go, not to the capitalist, the individual rich man, but to the whole community of workers; when everybody will be made to work, and as little advantage as possible will be allowed to one worker above another.

'I think it's absurd!' said Lucy, up in arms at once for all the superiorities she loved. 'What nonsense! Why, they can't ever do it!'

'Well, it's about that!' said David, smiling at her. 'Still, no doubt it could be done, if it ought to be done. But Socialism, as a system, seems to me, at any rate, to strike down and weaken the most precious thing in the world, that on which the whole of civilised life and progress rests — the spring of will and conscience in the individual. Socialism as a spirit, as an influence, is as old as organised

[287]

thought — and from the beginning it has forced us to think of the many when otherwise we should be sunk in thinking of the one. But, as a modern dogmatism, it is like other dogmatisms. The new truth of the future will emerge from it as a bud from its sheath, taking here and leaving there.’

He sat looking into the fire, forgetting his wife a little.

‘Well, any way, I’m sure you and I won’t have anything to do with it,’ said Lucy, positively. ‘I don’t a bit believe Lady Driffield will have to work in the mills, though Mrs. Shepton did say it would do her good. I shouldn’t mind something, perhaps, which would make her and Colonel Danby less uppish.’

She drew her needle in and out with vindictive energy.

‘Well, I don’t see much prospect of uppish people dying out of the world,’ said David, throwing himself back in his chair; ‘until ——’

He paused.

‘Until what?’ inquired Lucy.

‘Well, of course,’ he said after a minute, in a low voice, ‘we must always hold that the world is tending to be better, that the Divine Life in it will somehow realise itself, that pride will become gentleness, and selfishness love. But the better life cannot be imposed from without — it must grow from within.’

Lucy pondered a moment.

‘Then is it — is it because you think working-men

[288]

better than other people that you are so much more interested in them? Because you are, you know.’

‘Oh dear no!’ he said, smiling at her from under the hand which shaded his eyes; ‘they have their own crying faults and follies. But — so many of them lack the

first elementary conditions which make the better life possible — that is what tugs at one's heart and fills one's mind! How can *we* — we who have gained for ourselves health and comfort and knowledge — how can we stand by patiently and see our brother diseased and miserable and ignorant? —how can we bear our luxuries, so long as a child is growing up in savagery whom we might have taught, — or a man is poisoning himself with drink whom we might have saved, —or a woman is dropping from sorrow and overwork whom we might have cherished and helped? We are not our own — we are parts of the whole. Generations of workers have toiled for us in the past. And are we, in return, to carry our wretched bone off to our own miserable corner! — sharing and giving nothing? Woe to us if we do! Upon such comes indeed the “second death,” — the separation final and irretrievable, as far, at any rate, as this world is concerned, between us and the life of God!

Lucy had dropped her work. She sat staring at him —at the shining eyes, at the hand against the brow which shook a little, at the paleness which went so readily in him with any expression of deep emotion. Never had he so spoken to her before; never, all these

[289]

years. In general no one shrank more than he from ‘high phrases;’ no one was more anxious than he to give all philanthropic talk a shrewd business-like aspect, which might prevent questions as to what lay beneath.

Her heart fluttered a little.

‘David!’ she broke out, ‘what is it you believe? You know Dora thinks you believe nothing.’

‘Does she?’ he said, with evident shrinking. ‘No, I don’t think she does.’

Lucy instinctively moved her chair closer to him, and laid her head against his knee.

‘Yes, she does. But I don’t mind about that. I just wish you’d tell me why you believe in God, when you won’t go to church, and when you think Jesus was just — just a man.’

She drew her breath quickly. She was making a first voyage of discovery in her husband’s deepest mind, and she was astonished at her own venturesomeness.

He put out a hand and touched her hair.

‘I can’t read Nature and life any other way,’ he said at last, after a silence. ‘There seems to me some- thing in myself, and in other human beings, which is beyond Nature — which, instead of being made by Nature, is the condition of our knowing there is a Nature at all. This something — reason, consciousness, soul, call it what you will — unites us to the world; for everywhere in the world reason is at home, and gradually finds itself; it makes us aware of a great order in which we move; it breaks down the barriers of sense

[290]

between us and the absolute consciousness, the eternal life — “not ourselves,” yet in us and akin to us! — whence, if there is any validity in human logic, that order must spring. And so, in its most perfect work, it carries us to God — it bids us claim our sonship — it gives us hope of immortality!’

His voice had the vibrating intensity of prayer. Lucy hardly understood what he said at all, but the tears came into her eyes as she sat hiding them against his knee.

‘But what makes you think God is good —that He cares anything about us?’ she said softly.

‘Well — I look back on human life, and I ask what reason — which is the Divine Life communicated to us, striving to fulfil itself in us —has done, what light it throws upon its “great Original.” And then I see that it has gradually expressed itself in law, in knowledge, in love; that it has gradually learnt, under the pressure of something which is itself and not itself, that to be gained life must be lost; that beauty, truth, love, are the realities which abide. Goodness has slowly proved itself in the world, —is every

day proving itself, — like a light broadening in darkness! — to be that to which reason tends, in which it realises itself. And, if so, goodness here, imperfect and struggling as we see it always, must be the mere shadow and hint of that goodness which is in God! — and the utmost we can conceive of human tenderness, holiness, truth, though it tell us all we know, can yet suggest to us only the minutest fraction

[291]

of what must be the Divine tenderness, — holiness, — truth.’

There was a silence.

‘But this,’ he added after a bit, ‘is not to be proved by argument, though argument is necessary and inevitable, the mind being what it is. It can only be proved by living, — by taking it into our hearts, — by every little victory we gain over the evil self.’

The fire burnt quietly beside them. Everything was still in the house. Nothing stirred but their own hearts.

At last Lucy looked up quickly.

‘I am glad,’ she said with a kind of sob — ‘glad you think God loves us, and, if Sandy and I were to die, you would find us again.’

Instead of answering, he bent forward quickly and kissed her. ‘She gave a little shrinking movement.

‘Oh! that poor cheek!’ he said remorsefully; ‘did I touch it? I hope Dr. Mildmay won’t forget to-morrow.’

‘Oh! never mind about it,’ she said, half impatiently. ‘David!’

Her little thin face twitched and trembled. He was puzzled by her sudden change of expression, her agitation.

‘David! — you know — you know what Louie said. I want you to tell me whether she — she meant anything.’

He gave a little start, then he understood perfectly.

‘My dear wife,’ he said, laying his hand on hers, which were crossed on his knee.

[292]

She waited breathlessly.

‘You shall know all there is to know,’ he said at last, with an effort. ‘I thought perhaps you would have questioned me directly after that scene, and I would have told you; but as you did not, I could not bring myself to begin. What Louie said had to do with things that happened a year before I asked you to be my wife. When I spoke to you, they were dead and gone. The girl herself — was married. It was her story as well as my own, and it seemed to concern no one else in the world — not even you, dear. So I thought then, any way. Since, I have often wondered whether I was right.’

‘Was it when you were in Paris?’ she asked sharply.

He gave a sign of assent.

‘I thought so!’ she cried, drawing her breath. ‘I always said there was more than being ill. I said so to Dora. Well, tell me — tell me at once! What was she like? Was she young, and good-looking?’

He could not help smiling at her — there was something so childish in her jealous curiosity.

‘Let me tell you in order,’ he said, ‘and then we will both put it out of sight — at least, till I see Louie again.’

His heavy sigh puzzled her. But her strained and eager eyes summoned him to begin.

He told her everything, with singular simplicity and frankness. To Lucy it was indeed a critical

[293]

and searching moment! No wife, whatever staff she may be made of, can listen to such a story for the first time, from the husband she loves and respects, without passing thereafter into a new state of consciousness towards him. Sometimes she could hardly realise at all that it applied to David, this tale of passion he was putting, with averted face, into these short and sharp sentences. That conception of him which the daily life of eight years, with its growing self-surrender, its expanding spiritual force, had graven on her mind, clashed so oddly with all that he was saying! A certain desolate feeling, too large and deep in all its issues to be harboured long in her slight nature, came over her now and then. She had been so near to him all these years, and had yet known nothing. It was the separate-ness of the individual lot — that awful and mysterious chasm which divides even lover from lover — which touched her here and there like a cold hand, from which she shrank.

She grew a little cold and pale when he spoke of his weeks of despair, of the death from which Ancrum had rescued him. But any ordinary prudish word of blame, even for his silence towards her, never occurred to her. Once she asked him a wistful question: —

‘You and she thought that marrying didn’t matter at all when people loved each other — that nobody had a right to interfere? Do you think that now, David?’

‘No,’ he said, with deep emphasis. ‘No. — I have

[294]

come to think the most disappointing and hopeless marriage, nobly borne, to be better worth having than what people call an “ideal passion,” — if the ideal passion must be enjoyed at the expense of one of those fundamental rules which poor human nature has worked out, with such infinite difficulty and pain, for the protection and help of its own weakness. I did not know it. — but, so far as in me lay, I was betraying and injuring that society which has given me all I have.’

She sat silent. ‘The most *disappointing marriage*.’ An echo from that overheard talk at Benet’s Park floated through her mind. She winced, and shrank, even as she realised his perfect innocence of any such reference.

Then, with eagerness, she threw herself into innumerable questions about Elise — her looks, her motives, the details of what she said and did. Beneath the satisfaction of her curiosity, of course, there was all the time a pang — a pang not to be silenced. In her flights of idle fancy she had often suspected something not unlike the truth, basing her conjecture on the mystery which had always hung round that Paris visit, partly on the world’s general experience of what happened to handsome young men. For, in her heart of hearts, had there not lurked all the time a wonder which was partly self-judgment? Had David, with such a temperament, never been more deeply moved than she knew herself to have moved him? More than once a secret inarticulate suspicion of this kind had crossed her. The poorest

[295]

and shallowest soul may have these flashes of sad insight, under the kindling of its affections.

But now she *knew* and the difference was vast. After she had asked all her questions, and delivered a vehement protest against the tenacity of his self-reproach with regard to Louie — for what decent girl need go wrong unless she has a mind to? — she laid her head down again on David’s knee.

‘I don’t think she cared much about you — I’m sure she couldn’t have,’ she said slowly, finding a certain pleasure in the words.

David did not answer. He was sunk in memory. How far away lay that world of art and the artist from this dusty, practical life in which he was now immersed! At no time had he been really akin to it. The only art to which he was naturally susceptible was the art of oratory and poetry. Elise had created in him an artificial taste, which had died with his passion. Yet now, as his quickened mind lingered in the past, he felt a

certain wide philosophic regret for the complete divorce which had come about between him and so rich a section of human experience.

He was roused from his reverie, which would have reassured her, could she have followed it, more than any direct speech, by a movement from Lucy. Dropping the hand which had once more stolen over his brow, he saw her looking at him with wide, wet eyes.

‘David!’

‘Yes.’

[296]

‘Come here! close to me!’

He moved forward, and laid his arm round her shoulders, as she sat in her low chair beside him.

‘What is it, dear? I have been keeping you up too late.’

She lifted a hand, and brought his face near to hers.

‘David, I am a stupid little thing — but I do understand more than I did, and I would never, never desert you for anything, — for any sorrow or trouble in the world!’

The mixture of yearning, pain, triumphant affection in her tone, cannot be rendered in words.

His whole heart melted to her. As he held her to his breast, the hour they had just passed through took for both of them a sacred meaning and importance. Youth was going — their talk had not been the talk of youth. Was true love just beginning?

[297]

CHAPTER VIII

‘*My God! My God!*’

The cry was David's. He had reeled back against the table in his study, his hand upon an open book, his face turned to Doctor Mildmay, who was standing by the fireplace.

'Of course, I can't be sure,' said the doctor hastily, almost guiltily. 'You must not take it on my authority alone. Try and throw it off your mind. Take your wife up to town to see Selby or Paget, and if I am wrong I shall be too thankful! And, above all, don't frighten her. Take care — she will be down again directly.'

'You say,' said David, thickly, 'that if it were what you suspect, operation would be difficult. Yes, I see there is something of the sort here.'

He turned, shaking all over, to the book beside him, which was a medical treatise he had just taken down from his scientific bookcase.

'It would be certainly difficult,' said the doctor, frowning, his lower lip pushed forward in a stress of thought, 'but it would have to be attempted. Only,

[298]

on the temporal bone it will be a puzzle to go deep enough.'

David's eye ran along the page beside him. 'Sarcoma, which was originally regarded with far less terror than cancer (carcinoma), is now generally held by doctors to be more malignant and more deadly. There is much less pain, but surgery can do less, and death is in most cases infinitely more rapid.'

'Hush!' said the doctor, with short decision, 'I hear her coming down again. Let me speak.'

Lucy, who had run upstairs to quiet a yell of crying from Sandy immediately after Doctor Mildmay had finished his examination of her swollen cheek, opened the door as he spoke. She was slightly flushed, and her eyes were more wide open and restless than usual. David was apparently bending over a drawer which he had opened on the farther side of his writing-table. The doctor's face was entirely as usual.

'Well now, Mrs. Grieve, ' he said cheerily, 'we have been agreeing — your husband and I — that it will be best for you to go up to London and have that cheek

looked at by one of the crack surgeons. They will give you the best advice as to what to do with it. It is not a common ailment, and we are very fine fellows down here, but of course we can't get the experience, in a particular line of cases, of one of the first-rate surgical specialists. Do you think you could go to-morrow? I could make an appointment for you by telegraph today.'

[299]

Lucy gave a little unsteady, affected laugh.

'I don't see how I can go all in a moment like that,' she said. 'It doesn't matter! Why don't you give me something for it, and it will go away.'

'Oh! but it does matter,' said the doctor, firailly. 'Lumps like that are serious things, and mustn't be trifled with.'

'But what will they want to do to it?' said Lucy, nervously. She was standing with one long, thin hand resting lightly on the back of a chair, looking from David, whose face and figure were blurred to her by the dazzle of afternoon light coming in through the window, to Doctor Mildmay.

The doctor cleared his throat.

'They would only want to do what was best for you in eveiy way,' he said; 'you may be sure of that. Could you be very brave if they advised you that it ought to be removed?'

She gave a little shriek.

'What! you mean cut it out — cut it away!' she cried, shaking, and looking at him with the frowning anger of a child. 'Why, it would leave an ugly mark, a hideous mark!'

'No, it wouldn't. The mark would disfigure you much less than the swelling. They would take care to draw the skin together again neatly, and you could easily arrange your hair a little. But you ought to get a first-rate opinion.'

[300]

‘What is it? what do you call it?’ said Lucy, irritably. ‘I can’t think why you make such a fuss.’

‘Well, it might be various things,’ he said evasively. ‘Any way, you take my advice, and have it seen to. I can telegraph as I go from here.’

‘I could take you up to-morrow,’ said David, coming forward in answer to the disturbed look she threw him. Now that her flush had faded, how pale and drooping she was in the strong light! ‘It would be better, dear, to do what Doctor Mildmay recommends. And you never mind a day in London, you know.’

Did she detect any difference in the voice? She moved up to him, and he put his arm round her.

‘Must I?’ she said, helplessly; ‘it’s such a bore, tomorrow particularly. I had promised to take Sandy out to tea.’

‘Well, let that young man go without a treat for once,’ said the doctor, laughing. ‘He has a deal too many, any way. Very well, that’s settled. I will telegraph as I go to the train. Just come here a moment, Grieve.’

The two went out together. When David returned, any one who had happened to be in the hall would have seen that he could hardly open the sitting-room door, so fumbling were his movements. As he passed through the room to reach the study he caught sight of his own face in a glass, and stopping, with clenched hands, pulled himself together by the effort of his whole being.

[301]

When he opened the study-door, Lucy was hunting about his table in a quick, impatient way.

‘I can’t think where you keep your indiarubber rings, David. I want to put one round a parcel for Dora.’

He found one for her. Then she stood by the fire, as the sunset-light faded into dusk, and poured out to him a story of domestic grievances. Sarah, their cook, wished to leave and be married — it was very unexpected and very inconsiderate, and Lucy did not believe the young man was steady; and how on earth was she to find another cook? It was enough to drive one wild, the difficulty of getting cooks in Manchester.

For nearly an hour, till the supper-bell rang, she stood there, with her foot on the fender, chattering in a somewhat sharp, shrill way. Not one word would she say, or let him say, of London or the doctor's visit.

After supper, as they went back into the study, David looked for the rail way-guide. 'The 10. 15 will do,' he said. 'Mildmay has made the appointment for three. We can just get up in time.'

'It is great nonsense!' said Lucy, pouting. 'The question is, can we get back? I must get back. I don't want to leave Sandy for the night. He's got a cold.'

It seemed to David that something clutched at his breath and voice. Was it he or some one else that said: —

[302]

'That will be too tiring, clear. We shall have to stay the night.'

'No, I *must* get back,' said Lucy, obstinately.

Afterwards she brought her work as usual, and he professed to smoke and read. But the evening passed, for him, beneath his outward quiet, in a hideous whirl of images and sensations, which ultimately wore itself out, and led to a mood of dulness and numbness. Every now and then, as he sat there, with the fire crackling, and the familiar walls and books about him, he felt himself sinking, as it were, in a sudden abyss of horror; then, again, the scene of the afternoon seemed to him absurd, and he despised his own panic. He dwelt upon everything the doctor had said about the rarity, the exceptional nature of such an illness. Well, what is rare does not happen — not to oneself — that was what he seemed to be clinging to at last.

When Lucy went up to bed, he followed her in about a quarter of an hour.

‘Why, you are early!’ she said, opening her eyes.

‘I am tired,’ he said. ‘There was a great press of work to-day. I want a long night.’

In reality, he could not bear her out of his sight. Hour after hour he tossed restlessly, beside her quiet sleep, till the spring morning broke.

They left Manchester next morning in a bitter east wind. As she passed through the hall to the cab, Lucy

[303]

left a little note for Dora on the table, with instructions that it should be posted.

‘I want her to come and see him at his bedtime,’ she said, ‘for of course we can’t get back for that.’

David said nothing. When they got to the station, he dared not even propose to her the extra comfort of first class, lest he should intensify the alarm he perfectly well divined under her offhand, flighty manner.

By three o’clock they were in the waiting-room of the famous doctor they had come to see. Lucy looked round her nervously as they entered, with quick, dilating nostrils, and across David there swept a sudden choking memory of the trapped and fluttering birds he had sometimes seen in his boyhood struggling beneath a birdcatcher’s net on the moors.

As the appointment was at an unusual time, they were not kept waiting very long by the great man. He received them with a sort of kindly distance, made his examination very quickly, and asked her a number of general questions, entering the answers in his large patients’ book.

Then he leant back in his chair, looking thoughtfully at Lucy over his spectacles.

‘Well, ‘ he said at last, with a perfectly cheerful and business-like voice, ‘I am quite clear there is only one thing to be done, Mrs. Grieve. You must have that growth removed.’

Lucy flushed.

‘I want you to give me something to take it away,’

[304]

she said, half sullenly, half defiantly. She was sitting very erect, in a little tight-fitting black jacket, with her small black hat and veil on her knee.

‘No, I am sorry to say nothing can be done in that way. If you were my daughter or sister, I should say to you, have that lump removed without a day’s, an hour’s unnecessary delay. These growths are not to be trifled with.’

He spoke with a mild yet penetrating observance of her. A number of reflections were passing rapidly through his mind. The operation was a most unpromising one, but it was clearly the surgeon’s duty to try it. The chances were that it would prolong life which was now speedily and directly threatened, owing to the proximity of the growth to certain vital points.

‘When could you do it?’ said David, so hoarsely that he had to repeat his question. He was standing with his arm on the mantelpiece, looking down on the surgeon and his wife.

The great man lifted his eyebrows, and looked at his engagement-book attentively.

‘I could do it to-morrow,’ he said at last; ‘and the sooner, the better. Have you got lodgings? or can I help you? And —— ’

Then he stopped, and looked at Lucy. ‘Let me settle things with your husband, Mrs. Grieve,’ he said, with a kindly smile. ‘You look tired after your journey. You will find a fire and some newspapers in the waiting-room.’

[305]

And, with a suavity not to be gainsaid, he ushered her himself across the hall, and shut the waiting-room door upon her. Then he came back to David.

A little while after a bell rang, and the man-servant who answered it presently took some brandy into the consulting-room. Lucy meanwhile sat, in a dazed way, looking out of window at the square garden, where the lilacs were already in full leaf in spite of the east wind.

When her husband and the doctor came in she sprang up, looking partly awkward, partly resentful. Why had they been discussing it all without her?

‘Well, Mrs. Grieve,’ said the doctor, ‘your husband is just going to take you on to see the lodgings I recommend. By good luck they are just vacant. Then, if you like them, you know, you can settle in at once.’

‘But I haven’t brought anything for the night,’ cried Lucy in an injured voice, looking at David.

‘We will telegraph to Dora, darling,’ he said, taking up her bag and umbrella from the table; ‘but now we mustn’t keep Mr. Selby. He has to go out.’

‘How long will it take?’ interrupted Lucy, addressing the surgeon. ‘Can I get back next day?’

‘Oh no! you will have to be four or five days in town. But don’t alarm yourself, Mrs. Grieve. You won’t know anything at all about the operation itself; your husband will look after you, and then a little patience — and hope for the best. Now I really must be off. Good-bye to you — good-bye to you.’

[306]

And he hurried off, leaving them to find their own cab. When they got in, Lucy said, passionately: —

‘I want to go back, David. I want Sandy. I won’t go to these lodgings.’

Then courage came to him. He took her hand.

* Dear, dear wife — for my sake — for Sandy’s!’

She stared at him — at his white face.

‘Shall I die?’ she cried, with the same passionate tone.

‘No, no, no!’ he said, kissing the quivering hand, and seeing no one but her in the world, though they were driving through the crowd of Regent Street. ‘But we must do everything Mr. Selby said. That hateful thing must be taken away — it is so near — think for yourself! — to the eye and the brain; and it might go downwards to the throat. You will be brave, won’t you? We will look after you so — Dora and I.’

Lucy sank back in the cab, with a sudden collapse of nerve and spirit. David hung over her, comforting her, one moment promising her that in a few days she should have Sandy again, and be quite well; the next, checked and turned to stone by the memory of the terrible possibilities freely revealed to him in his private talk with Mr. Selby, and by the sense that he might be soothing the present only to make the future more awful.

‘David! she is in such fearful pain! The nurse says she must have more morphia. They didn’t give

[307]

her enough. Will you run to Mr. Selby’s house? You won’t find him, of course — he is on his round — but his assistant, who was with him here just now, went back there. Run for him at once.’

It was Dora who spoke, as she closed the folding-doors of the inner room where Lucy lay. David, who was crouching over the fire in the sitting-room, whither the nurse had banished him for a while, after the operation, sprang up, and disappeared in an instant. Those faint, distant sounds of anguish which had been in his ear for half an hour or more, ever since the doctors had departed, declaring that everything was satisfactorily over, had been more than his manhood could bear.

He returned in an incredibly short space of time with a young surgeon, who at once administered another injection of morphia.

‘A highly sensitive patient.’ he said to David. ‘and the nerves have, no doubt, been badly cut. But she will do now.’

And, indeed, the moaning had ceased. She lay with closed eyes — so small a creature in the wide bed — her head and face swathed in bandages. But the breathing was growing even and soft. She was once more unconscious.

The doctor touched David's hand and went, after a word with the nurse.

'Won't you go into the next room, sir, and have your tea? Mrs. Grieve is sure to sleep now,' said the nurse to him in her compassion.

[308]

He shook his head, and sat down near the foot of the bed. The nurse went into the dressing-room a moment to speak to Dora, who was doing some unpacking there, and he was left alone with his wife.

The sounds of the street came into the silent room, and every now and then he had a start of agony, thinking that she was moving again — that she was in pain again. But no, she slept; her breath came gently through the childish parted lips, and the dim light — for the nurse had drawn the curtains on the lengthening April day — hid her pallor and the ghastliness of the dressings.

Forty-eight hours ago, and they were in the garden with Sandy! And now life seemed to have passed for ever into this half-light of misery. Everything had dropped away from him — the interests of his business, his books, his social projects. He and she were shut out from the living world. Would she ever rise from that bed again — ever look at him with the old look?

He sat on there, hour after hour, till Dora coaxed him into the sitting-room for a while, and tried to make him take some food. But he could not touch it, and how the sudden gas which the servant lit glared on his sunken eyes! He waited on his companion mechanically, then sat, with his head on his hand, listening for the sound of the doctors' steps.

When they came, they hardly disturbed their patient. She moaned at being touched; but everything was right, and the violent pain which had unexpectedly

[309]

followed the operation was not likely to recur.

‘And what a blessing that she took the chloroform so well, with hardly any after-effects!’ said Mr. Selby cheerily, drawing on his gloves in the sitting-room. ‘Well, Mr. Grieve, you have got a good nurse, and can leave your wife to her with perfect peace of mind. You must sleep, or you will knock up; let me give you a sleeping draught.’

‘Oh! I shall sleep,’ said David, impatiently. ‘You considered the operation successful — completely successful?’

The surgeon looked gravely into the fire.

‘I shall know more in a week or so,’ he said. ‘I have never disguised from you, Mr. Grieve, how serious and difficult the case was. Still, we have done what was right — we can but wait for the issue.’

An hour later Dora looked into the sitting-room, and said softly: —

‘She would like to see you, David.’

He went in, holding his breath. There was a night-light in the room, and her face was lying in deep shadow.

He knelt down beside her, and kissed her hand.

‘My darling!’ he said — and his voice was quite firm and steady — ‘are you easier now?’

‘- Yes, ‘ she said faintly. ‘Where are you going to sleep?’

[310]

‘In a room just beyond Dora’s room. She could make me hear in a moment if you wanted me.’

Then, as he looked closer, he saw that about her head was thrown the broad white lace scarf she had worn round her neck on the journey up. And as he bent to her,

she suddenly opened her languid eyes, and gazed at him full. For the moment it was as though she were given back to him.

‘I made Dora put it on,’ she said feebly, moving her hand towards the lace. ‘Does it hide all those nasty bandages?’

‘Yes. I can’t see them at all.’

‘Is it pretty?’

The little gleam of a smile nearly broke down his self-command.

‘Very,’ he said, with a quivering lip.

She closed her eyes again.

‘Oh! I hope Lizzie will look after Sandy,’ she said after a while, with a long sigh.

Not a word now of wilfulness, of self-assertion! After the sullenness and revolt of the day before, which had lasted intermittently almost up to the coming of the doctors, nothing could be more speaking, more pathetic, than this helpless acquiescence.

‘I mustn’t stay with you,’ he said. ‘You ought to be going to sleep again. Nurse will give you something if you can’t.’

‘I’m quite comfortable,’ she said, sleepily. ‘There isn’t any pain.’

[311]

And she seemed to pass quickly and easily into sleep as he sat looking at her.

An hour or two later, Dora, who could not sleep from the effects of fatigue and emotion, was lying in her uncomfortable stretcher-bed, thinking with a sort of incredulity of all that had passed since David’s telegram had reached her the day before, or puzzling herself to know how her employers could possibly spare her for another three or four days’ holiday, when she was startled by some recurrent sounds from the room beyond her own. David was sleeping there, and Dora, with her woman’s quickness, had at once perceived that the partition between them was very thin, and had been as still as a mouse in going to bed.

The sound alarmed her, though she could not make it out. Instinctively she put her ear to the wall. After a minute or two she hastily moved away, and hiding her head under the bedclothes, fell to soft crying and praying.

For it was the deep rending sound of suppressed weeping, the weeping of a strong man who believes himself alone with his grief and with God. That she should have heard it at all filled her with a sort of shame.

Things, however, looked much brighter on the following morning. The wound caused by the operation was naturally sore and stiff, and the dressing was painful; but when the doctor's visit was over, and Lucy was

[312]

lying in the halo of her white scarf on her fresh pillows, in a room which Dora and the nurse had made daintily neat and straight, her own cheerfulness was astonishing. She made Dora go out and get her some patterns for Sandy's summer suits, and when they came she lay turning them over from time to time, or weakly twisting first one and then another round her finger. She was, of course, perpetually anxious to know when she would be well, and whether the scar would be very bad; but on the whole she was a docile and promising patient, and she even began to see some gleams of virtue in Mr. Selby, for whom at first she had taken the strongest dislike.

Meanwhile, David, haunted always by a horrible knowledge which was hid from her, could get nothing decided for the future out of the doctors.

'We must wait,' said Mr. Selby; 'for the present all is healing well, but I wish we could get up her general strength. It must have been running down badly of late.'

Whereupon David was left reproaching himself for blindness and neglect, the real truth being that, with any one of Lucy's thin elastic frame and restless temperament, a good deal of health-degeneration may go on without its becoming conspicuous.

A few days passed. Dora was forced to go back to work; but as she was to take up her quarters at the Merton Road house, and to write long accounts of Sandy to his

mother every day, Lucy saw her depart with considerable equanimity. Dora left her patient

[313]

on the sofa, a white and ghostly figure, but already talking eagerly of returning to Manchester in a week. When she heard the cab roll off, Lucy lay back on her cushions and counted the minutes till David should come in from the British Museum, whither, because of her improvement, he had gone to clear up one or two bibliographical points. She caressed the thought of being left alone with him, except for the nurse — left to that tender and special care he was bestowing on her so richly, and through which she seemed to hold and know him afresh.

When he came in she reproached him for being late, and both enjoyed and scouted his pleas in answer.

‘Well, I don’t care,’ she said obstinately; ‘I wanted you.’

Then she heaved a long sigh.

‘David, I made nurse let me look at the horrid place this morning. I shall always be a fright — it’s no good.’

But he knew her well enough to perceive that she was not really very downcast, and that she had already devised ways and means of hiding the mark as much as possible.

‘It doesn’t hurt or trouble you at all?’ he asked her anxiously.

‘No, of course not,’ she said impatiently. ‘It’s getting well. Do ask nurse to bring me my tea.’

The nurse brought it, and she and David spoiled their invalid with small attentions.

[314]

‘It’s nice being waited on,’ said Lucy when it was over, settling herself to rest with a little sigh of sensuous satisfaction.

Another week passed, and all seemed to be doing well, though Mr. Selby would say nothing as yet of allowing her to move. Then came a night when she was rest- less; and in the morning the wound troubled her, and she was extremely irritable and depressed. The moment the nurse gave him the news at his door in the early morning, David’s face changed. He dressed, and went off for Mr. Selby, who came at once.

‘Yes,’ he said gravely, sifter his visit, as he shut the folding-doors of Lucy’s room behind him — ‘yes, I am sorry to say there is a return. Now the question is, what to do.’

He came and stood by the fireplace, legs apart, head down, debating with himself. David, haggard and unshorn, watched him helplessly.

‘We *could* operate again,’ he said thoughtfully, ‘but it would cut her about terribly. And I can’t disguise from you, Mr. Grieve’ — as he raised his head and caught sight of his companion his tone softened insensibly — ‘that, in my opinion, it would be all but useless. I more than suspect, from my observation to-day, that there are already secondary growths in the lung. Probably they have been there for some time.’

There was a silence.

‘Then we can do nothing,’ said David.

[315]

‘Nothing effectual, alas!’ said the doctor, slowly. ‘Palliatives, of course, we can use, of many kinds. But there will not be much pain.’

‘Will it be long?’

David was standing with his back to the doctor, looking out of window, and Mr. Selby only just heard the words.

‘I fear it will be a rapid case,’ he said reluctantly. ‘This return is rapid, and there are many indications this morning I don’t like. But don’t wish it prolonged, my dear sir! — have courage for her and yourself.’

The words were not mere platitudes — the soul of a good man looked from the clear and masterful eyes. He described the directions he had left with the nurse, and promised to come again in the evening. Then he grasped David’s hand, and would have gone away quickly. But David, following him mechanically to the door, suddenly recollected himself.

‘Could we move her?’ he asked; ‘she may crave to get home, or to some warm place.’

‘Yes, you can move her,’ the doctor said, decidedly. ‘With an invalid-carriage and a nurse you can do it. We will talk about it when I come again to-night.’

‘A ghastly case,’ he was saying to himself as he went downstairs, ‘and, thank heaven! a rare one. Strange and mysterious thing it is, with its ghoulsh preference for the young. Poor thing! poor thing! and yesterday she was so cheerful — she would tell me all about her boy.’

[316]

CHAPTER IX

THE history of the weeks that followed shall be partly told in David’s own words, gathered from those odds-and-ends of paper, old envelopes, the half-sheets of letters, on which he would write sometimes in those hours when he was necessarily apart from Lucy, thrusting them on his return between the leaves of his locked journal, clinging to them as the only possible record of his wife’s ebbing life, yet passionately avoiding the sight of them when they were once written.

‘RYDAL, AMBLESIDE: *May 5th.* — We arrived this afternoon. The day has been glorious. The mountains round the head of the lake, as we drove along it at a foot’s pace that the carriage might not shake her, stood out in the sun; the light wind drove the

cloud-shadows across their blues and purples; the water was a sheet of light; the larches were all out, though other trees are late; and every breath was perfume.

‘But she was too weary to look at it; and before we had gone two miles, it seemed to me that I could think of nothing but the hateful length of the drive, and the ups and downs of the road.

[317]

‘When we arrived, she would walk into the cottage, and before nurse or I realised what she was doing, she went straight through the little passage which runs from front to back, out into the garden. She stood a moment — in her shawls, with the little white hood she has devised for herself drawn close round her head and face — looking at the river with its rocks and foaming water, at the shoulder of Nab Scar above the trees, at the stone house with the red blinds opposite.

‘“ It looks just the same,” she said, and the tears rolled down her cheeks.

‘We brought her in — nurse and I — and when she had been put comfortably on the low couch I had sent from London beforehand, and had taken some food, she was a little cheered. She made us draw her to the window of the little back sitting-room, and she lay looking out till it was almost dark. But as T foresaw, the pain of coming is more than equal to any pleasure there may be.

‘Yet she would come. During those last days in London, when she would hardly speak to us, when she lay in the dark in that awful room all day, and every attempt to feed her or comfort her made her angry, I could not, for a long time, get her to say what she wished about moving, except that she would not go back to Manchester.

‘Her hand-glass could not be kept from her, and one morning she cried bitterly when she saw that she could no longer so arrange her laces as to completely hide the disfigurement of the right side of the face.

[318]

‘“No! I will *never* go back to Merton Road!” she cried, throwing down the glass;” no one shall see me!’

‘But at night, after I hoped she was asleep, she sent nurse to say that she wanted to go to — *Rydal!* — to the same cottage by the Rotha we had stayed at on our honeymoon. Nurse said she could — she could have an invalid-carriage from door to door. Would I write for the rooms at once? And Sandy could join us there.

‘So, after nine years, we are here again. The house is empty. We have our old rooms. Nothing is changed in the valley. After she was asleep, I went out along the river, keeping to a tiny path on the steep right bank till I reached a wooden bridge, and then through a green bit, fragrant with fast-springing grass and flowers, to that point beside the lake I remember so well. I left her there one day, sitting, and dabbling in the water, while I ran up Loughrigg. She was nineteen. How she tripped over the hills!

‘To-night there was a faint moon. The air was cold, but quite still, and the reflections, both of the islands and of Nab Scar, seemed to sink into unfathomed depths of shadowy water. Loughrigg rose boldly to my left against the night sky; I could see the rifle-butts and the soft blackness of the great larch-plantation on the side of Silver How.

‘There, to my right, was the tower of the little church, whitish against the woods, and close beside it, amid the trees, I felt the presence of Wordsworth’s house, though I could not see it.

[319]

‘O poet! who wrote for me, not knowing — oh, heavenly valley! — you have but one voice; it haunts my ears: —

‘“*Thy mornings showed, thy nights concealed,
The bowers where Lucy played;
And thine, too, is the last green field
That Lucy’s eyes surveyed.*”

‘*May 10th.* — She never speaks of dying, and I dare not speak of it. But sometimes she is like a soul wandering in terror through a place of phantoms. Her eyes grow large and strained, she pushes me away from her. And she often wakes at night, sinking in black gulfs of fear, from which I cannot save her.

‘Oh, my God! my heart is torn, my life is sickened with pity! Give me some power to comfort take from me this impotence, this numbness. She, so little practised in suffering, so much of a child still, called to bear this monstrous thing. Savage, incredible Nature! But behind Nature there is God —

‘To-night she asked me to pray with her — asked it with reproach. “You never say good things to me now!” And I could not explain myself.

‘It was in this way. When Dora was with her, she used to read and pray with her. I would not have interfered for the world. When Dora left, I thought she would use the little manual of prayers for the sick that Dora had left behind; the nurse, who is a religious woman, and reads to her a good deal, would have read

[320]

this whenever she wished. One night I offered to read it to her myself, but she would not let me. And for the rest — in spite of our last talk — I was so afraid of jarring her, of weakening any thought that might have sustained her.

‘But to-night she asked me, and for the first time since our earliest married life I took her hand and prayed. Afterwards she lay still, till suddenly her lip began to quiver.

‘“I wasn’t ever so very bad. I did love you and Sandy, and I did help that girl, —you know —that Dora knew, who went wrong. And I am so ill —so ill!” ’

‘*May 20th.* — A fortnight has passed. Sandy and his nurse are lodging at a house on the hill; every morning he comes down here, and I take him for a walk. He was very puzzled and grave at first when he saw her, but now he has grown used to her look, and he plays merrily about among the moss-grown rocks beside the river, while

she lies in the slung couch, to which nurse and I carry her on a little stretcher, watching him.

‘There was a bright hour this morning. We are in the midst of a spell of dry and beautiful weather, such as often visits this rainy country in the early summer, before any visitors come. The rhododendrons and azaleas are coming out in the gardens under Loughrigg — some little copses here and there are sheets of blue — and the green is rushing over the valley. We had put her

[321]

among the rocks under a sycamore-tree — a singularly beautiful tree, with two straight stems dividing its rounded masses of young leaf. There were two wag-tails perching on the stones in the river, and swinging their long tails; and the light flickered through the trees on to the water foaming round the stones or slipping in brown cool sheets between them. There was a hawthorn-tree in bloom near by; in the garden of the house opposite a woman was hanging out some clothes to dry; the Grasmere coach passed with a clatter, and Sandy with the two children from the lodgings ran out to the bridge to look at it.

‘Yes, she had a moment of enjoyment! I bind the thought of it to my heart. Lizzie was sitting sewing near the edge of the river, that she might look after Sandy. He was told not to climb on to the stones in the current of the stream, but as he was bent on catching the vain, provoking wagtails who strutted about on them, the prohibition was unendurable. As soon as Lizzie’s head was bent over her work, he would clamber in and out till he reached some quite forbidden rock; and then, looking back with dancing eyes and the tip of his little tongue showing between his white teeth, he would say, " Go on with your work, Nana, Darling!" —And his mother’s look never left him all the time.

‘Once he had been digging with his little spade among the fine grey gravel silted up here and there among the hollows of the rocks. He had been digging with great energy, and for May the air was hot. Lizzie

[322]

looked up and said to him, "Sandy, it's time for me to take you to bed" — that is, for his midday sleep. "Yes," he said, with a languid air, sitting down on a stone with his spade between his knees — "yes, I think I'd better come to bed. My heart is very dreary." "What do you mean?" "My heart is very dreary — dreary means tired, you know." "Oh, indeed! — where is your heart?" "Here," he said, laying his hand lackadaisically on the small of his back.

'And then she smiled, for the first time for so many, many days! I came to sit by her; she left her hand in mine; and after the child was gone the morning slipped by peacefully, with only the sound of the river and the wheels of a few passing carts to break the silence.

'In the afternoon she asked me if I should not have to go back to Manchester. How could all those men and those big printing-rooms get on without me? I told her that John reported to me every other day; that a batch of our best men had sent word to me, through him, that everything was going well, and I was not to worry; that there had been a strike of some importance among the Manchester compositors, but that our men had not joined.

'She listened to it all, and then she shut her eyes and said: —

' "I'm glad you did that about the men. I don't understand quite — but I'm glad."

' . . . You can see nothing of her face now in its white draperies but the small, pointed chin and nose;

[323]

and then the eyes, with their circles of pain, the high centre of the brow, and a wave or two of her pretty hair tangled in the lace edge of the hood.

' "*My Darling — my darling!* God have mercy upon us!"

‘June 2nd. — “For the hardness of your hearts he wrote you this commandment. How profoundly must he who spoke the things reported in this passage have conceived of marriage! *For the hardness of your hearts*. Himself governed wholly by the inward voice, unmoved by the mere external authority of the great Mosaic name, he handles the law presented to him with a sort of sad irony. The words imply the presence in him of a slowly formed and passionately held ideal. Neither sin, nor suffering, nor death can nor ought to destroy the marriage bond, once created. It is not there for our pleasure, nor for its mere natural object, — but to form the soul.

‘The world has marched since that day, in law — still more, as it supposes, in sentiment. But are we yet able to bear such a saying?

‘. . . Then compare with these words the magnificent outburst in which, a little earlier, he sweeps from his path his mother and his brethren. There are plentiful signs — take the “corban” passage, for instance, still more, the details of the Prodigal Son — of the same deep and tender thinking as we find in the most authentic sayings about marriage applied to the parental and brotherly relation. But he himself, realising, as it

[324]

would seem, with peculiar poignancy, the sacredness of marriage and the claim of the family, is yet alone, and must be alone to the end. The fabric of the Kingdom rises before him; his soul burns in the fire of his message; and the lost sheep call.

‘She has been fairly at ease this afternoon, and I have been lying on the grass by the lake, pondering these things. The narrative of Mark, full as it is already of legendary accretion, brings one so close to him; the living breath and tone are in one’s ears.’

‘*June 4th.* — These last two days she is much worse. The local trouble is stationary, but there must be developments we know nothing of elsewhere. For she perishes every day before our eyes — we cannot give her sleep — there is such malaise, emaciation, weariness.

‘She is wonderfully patient. It seems to me, looking back, that a few days ago came a change. I cannot remember any words that marked it, but it is as though — without our knowing it — her eyes had turned themselves irrevocably from us and from life, to the hills of death. Yet — strange! — she takes more notice of those about her. Yesterday she showed an interest just like her old self in the children’s going to a little fete at Ambleside. She would have them all in — Sandy and the landlady’s two little girls — to look at them when they were dressed. — What strikes me with awe is that she has no more tears, though she says every now and

[325]

then the most touching things — things that pierce to the very marrow.

‘She told me to-day that she wished to see her father. I have written to him this evening.’

‘*June 6th.* — Purcell has been here a few hours, and has gone back to-night. She received him with perfect calmness, though they have not spoken to each other for ten years. He came in with his erect, military port and heavy tread, looking little older, though his hair is grey. But he blanched at sight of her.

‘“You must kiss me on the forehead,” she said to him feebly, “but, please, very gently.”

‘So he kissed her, and sat down. He cleared his throat often, and did not know what to say. But she asked him, by degrees, about some of her mother’s relations whom she had not seen for long, then about himself and his health. The ice thawed, but the talk was difficult. Towards the end he inquired of her — and, I think, with genuine feeling — whether she had “sought salvation.” She said faintly, “No; ” and he, looking shocked and shaken, bade her, with very much of his old voice and manner, and all the old phraseology, “lay hold of the merits of Jesus.”

‘Towards the end of his exhortations she interrupted him.

‘“You must see Sandy, and you must kiss me again. I wasn’t a good daughter. But, oh! why

[326]

wouldn't you make friends with me and David? I tried — you remember I tried?"

‘“I am ready to forgive all the past," he said, drawing himself up; “I can say no more.”

‘“Well, kiss me!” she said, in a melancholy whisper. And he kissed her again.

‘Then I would not let him exhaust her any more, or take any set farewell. I hurried him away as though for tea, and nurse and I pronounced against his seeing her again.

‘On our walk to the coach he broke out once more, and implored me, with much unction and some dignity, not to let my infidel opinions stand in the way, but to summon some godly man to see and talk with her. I said that a neighbouring clergyman had been several times to see her, since, as he probably knew, she had been a Church worn an for years. In my inward frenzy I seemed to be hurling all sorts of wild sayings at his head; but I don't believe they came to speech, for I know at the end we parted with the civility of strangers. I promised to send him news. What amazed me was his endless curiosity about the details of her illness. He would have the whole history of the operation, and all the medical opinion she could remember from the nurse. And on our walk he renewed the subject; but I could bear it no more.

‘Oh, my God! what does it matter to me *why* she is dying?

‘Then, when I got home, I found her rather excited,

[327]

and she whispered to me: “He asked me if I had sought salvation, and I said No. I didn't seek it, David; but it comes — when you are here.” Then her chest heaved, but with that strange instinct of self-preservation she would not say a word more, nor would she let me weep. She asked me to hold her hands in mine, and so she slept a little.

‘Dora writes that in a fortnight more she can get a holiday of a week or two. Will she be in time?’

‘It is two months to-day since we went to London.’

On one of the last days in June Dora arrived. It seemed to her that Lucy could have but a few days to live. Working both outwardly and inwardly, the terrible disease had all but done its work. She had nearly lost the power of swallowing, and lived mainly on the morphia injections which were regularly administered to her. But at intervals she spoke a good deal, and quite clearly.

And Dora had not been six hours with her before a curious thing happened. The relation which, ever since their meeting as girls, had prevailed between her and Lucy, seemed to be suddenly reversed. She was no longer the teacher and sustainer; in the little dying creature there was now a remote and heavenly power; it could not be described, but Dora yielded with tears to the awe and sovereignty of it.

She saw with some plainness, however, that it depended on the relation between the husband and wife.

[328]

Since she had been with them last, it had been touched — this relation — by a Divine alchemy. The self in both seemed to have dropped away. The two lives were no longer two, but one — he cherishing, she leaning.

The night she came she pressed Lucy to take the Holy Communion. Lucy assented, and the Communion was administered, with David kneeling beside her pillow. But afterwards Lucy was troubled, and when Dora proposed at night to read and pray with her, she said faintly, ‘No; David does.’ And thenceforward, though she was all gentleness, Dora did not find it very easy to get religious speech with her, and went often — poor Dora! — sadly, and in fear.

Dora had been in the house five days, when new trouble followed on the old. David one morning received a letter from Louie, forwarded from Manchester, and when

Dora followed him into the garden with a message, she found him walking about distracted.

‘Read it!’ he said.

The letter was but a few scrawled lines: —

‘Cecile has got diphtheria. Our doctor says so, but he is a devil. I must have another — the best — and there is no money. If she dies, you will never see me again, I swear. I dare say you will think it a good job, but now you know.’

The writing was hardly legible, and the paper had been twisted and crumpled by the haste of the writer.

‘What is to be done?’ said David, in pale despair. ‘Can I leave this house one hour — one minute?’

[329]

Then a sudden thought struck him. He looked at Dora with a flash of appeal.

‘Dora, you have been our friend always, and you have been good to Louie. Will you go? I need not say all shall be made easy. I could get John to take you over. He has been several times to Paris for me this last five years, and would be a help.’

That was indeed a struggle for Dora! Her heart clung to these people she loved, and the devote in her yearned for those last opportunities with the dying, on the hope of which she still fed herself. To go from this deathbed, to that fierce mother, in those horrible surroundings!

But just as she had taught Louie in the old days because David Grieve asked her, so now she went, in the end, because he asked her.

She was to be away six days at least. But the doctor thought it possible she might return to find Lucy alive. David made every possible arrangement — telegraphed to Louie that she was coming; and to John directing him to meet her at Warrington and take her on; wrote out the times of her journey; the address of a pension in the Avenue Friedland, kept by an English lady, to which he happened to be able to direct her; and the name of the English lawyer in Paris who had advised him at the time of Louie’s

marriage, had done various things for him since, and would, he knew, be a friend in need.

Twelve hours after the arrival of Louie's letter.

[330]

Dora tore herself from Lucy. 'Don't say good-bye, said David, his face working, and to spare him and Lucy she went as though she were just going across the road for the night. David saw her — a white and silent traveller — into the car that was to take her on the first stage of a journey which, apart from everything else, alarmed her provincial imagination. David's gratitude threw her into a mist of tears as she drove off. Surely, of all the self-devoted acts of Dora's life, this mission and this leave-taking were not the least!

Lucy heard the wheels roll away. A stony, momentary sense of desolation came over her as this one more strand was cut. But David came in, and the locked lips relaxed. It had been necessary to tell her the reason of Dora's departure. And in the course of the long June evening David gathered from the motion of her face that she wished to speak to him. He bent down to her, and she murmured: —

'Tell Louie I wished I'd been kinder — I pray God will let her keep Cecile. . . . She must come to Manchester again when I'm gone.'

The night-watch was divided between David and the nurse. At five o'clock in the summer morning — brilliant once more after storm and rain — he injected morphia into the poor wasted arm, and she took a few drops of brandy. Then, after a while, she seemed to sleep; and he, stretched on a sofa beside her, and confident of waking at the slightest sound, fell into a light doze.

[331]

Lucy woke when the sun was high, rather more than an hour later. Her eyes were teased by a chink in the curtain; she hardly knew what it was, but her dying sense

shrank, and she vaguely thought of calling David. But as she lay, propped up, she looked down on him, and she saw his pale, sunken face, with the momentary softening of rest upon it. And there wandered through her mind fragments of his sayings to her in that last evening of theirs together in the Manchester house, — especially, '*It can only he proved by living — by every victory over the evil self.*' In its mortal fatigue her memory soon lost hold of words and ideas; but she had the strength not to wake him.

Then as she lay in what seemed to her this scorching light — in reality it was one little ray which had evaded the thick curtains — a flood of joy seemed to pour into her soul. 'I shall not live beyond to-day,' she thought, 'but I know now I shall see him again.'

When at last she made a faint movement, and he woke at once, he saw that the end was very near. He thought of Dora in Paris with a pang, but there was no help for it. Through that day he never stirred from her side in the darkened room, and she sank fast. She spoke only one connected sentence — to say with great difficulty, 'Dying is long — but — not — painful.' The words woke in him a strange echo; they had been among the last words of 'Lias, his childhood's friend. But she breathed one or two names — the landlady of

[332]

the lodging-house, and the servants, especially the nurse.

They came in on tiptoe and kissed her. She had already thanked each one.

Sandy was just going to bed, when David carried him in to her. One of her last conscious looks was for him. He was in his nightgown, with bare feet, holding his father tight round the neck, and whimpering. They bent down to her, and he kissed her on the cheek, as David told him, 'very softly.' Then he cried to go away from this still, grey mother. David gave him to the nurse and came back.

The day passed, and the night began. The doctor in his evening visit said it would be a marvel if she saw the morrow. David sat beside the bed, his head bowed on the hand he held; the nurse was in the farther corner. His whole life and hers passed

before him; and in his mind there hovered perpetually the image of the potter and the wheel. He and she — the Hand so unfaltering, so divine had bound them there, through resistance and anguish unspeakable. And now, for him there was only a sense of absolute surrender and submission, which in this hour of agony and exaltation rose steadily into the ecstasy — *ay, the vision of faith!* In the pitying love which had absorbed his being he had known that ‘best ‘at last whereat his craving youth had grasped; and losing himself wholly had found his God.

And for her, had not her weak life become one

[333]

flame of love — a cup of the Holy Grail, beating and pulsing with the Divine Life?

The dawn came. She palled restlessly at her white wrapper — seemed to be in pain — whispered something of ‘a weight.’ Then the last change came over her. She opened her eyes — but they saw no longer. Nature ceased to resist, and the soul had long since yielded itself. With a meekness and piteousness of look not to be told, never to be forgotten, Lucy Grieve passed away.

[334]

CHAPTER X

THE very day after Lucy had been carried to her last rest in that most poetic of all graveyards which bends its grassy shape to the encircling Rotha and holds in trust the ashes of Wordsworth, David Grieve started for Paris.

He had that morning received a telegram from Dora: ‘Louie disappeared. Have no clue. Can you come?’ Two days before, the news of Cecile’s death from diphtheria had reached him in a letter from poor Dora, rendered almost inarticulate by her grief for Lucy and bitter regret for her own absence from her cousin’s deathbed, mingling with her pity for Louie’s unfortunate child and her dread and panic with regard to Louie herself.

But so long as that white form lay shrouded in the cottage upper room, he could not move — and he could scarcely feel.

The telegram broke in upon a sort of lethargy which had held him ever since Lucy's last breath. He started at once. On the way he spent two hours at Manchester. On the table in his study there still lay the medical book

[335]

he had taken down from his scientific shelf on the night of Dr. Mildmay's visit; in Lucy's room her dresses hung as she had left them on the doors; a red woollen cap she had been knitting for Sandy was thrown down half finished on the dressing-table. Of the hour he spent in that room, putting away some of the little personal possessions, still warm as it were from her touch, let no more be said.

When he reached Paris he inquired for Dora at the *pension* in the Avenue Friedland, to which he had sent her. John, who had also written to him, and was still in Paris, was staying, he knew, at an hotel on the Quai Voltaire. But he went to Dora first.

Dora, however, was not at home. She had left for him the full address of the house in the Paris *banlieu* where she had found Louie, and full directions as to how to reach it. He took one of the open cabs and drove thither in the blazing July sun.

An interminable drive! — the whole length of the Avenue de la Grande-Armee and the Avenue de Neuilly, past the Seine and the Rond Pont de Courbevoie, until at last turning to the left into the wide and villainously paved road that leads to Rueil, Bougival, and St. Germain, the driver and David between them with difficulty discovered a side street which answered to the name Dora had several times given.

They had reached one of the most squalid parts of the western banlieue. Houses half built and deserted in the middle, perhaps by some bankrupt builder; small traders.

[336]

bakers, charcutiers, fried-fish sellers, lodged in structures of lath and plaster, just run up and already crumbling; cabarets of the roughest and meanest kind, adorned with high-sounding devices, — David mechanically noticed one which had blazoned on its stained and peeling front, *A la renaissance du Phénix*; — heaps of rubbish and garbage with sickly children playing among them; here and there some small, ill-smelling factory; a few melancholy shrubs in new-made gardens, drooping and festering under a cruel sun in a scorched and unclean soil: — the place repelled and outraged every sense. Was it here that little Cecile had passed from a life of pain to a death of torture?

He rang at a sinister and all but windowless house, which he was able to identify from Dora's directions. John opened to him, and in a little room to the right, which looked on to a rank bit of neglected garden, he found Dora. A woman, with a scowling brow and greedy mouth, disappeared into the back premises as he entered.

Dora and he clasped hands. Then the sight of his face broke down even her long-practised self-control, and she laid her head down on the table and sobbed. But he showed little emotion; while John, standing shyly on the other side of the room, and the weeping Dora could hardly find words to tell their own story, so overwhelmed were they by those indelible signs upon him of all that he had gone through.

He asked them rapidly a number of questions.

[337]

In the first place Dora explained that she and John were engaged in putting together whatever poor possessions the house contained of a personal kind, that they might not either be seized for debt, or fall into the claws of the old *bonne* a woman of the lowest type, who had already plundered all she could. As to the wretched husband, very little information was forthcoming. John believed that he had been removed to the hospital in a state of alcoholic paralysis the very week that Cecile was taken ill; at any rate he had made no sign.

The rest of the story which Dora had to tell may be supplemented by a few details which were either unknown to his informants, or remained unknown to David.

Louie, on her return to Paris with David's hundred pounds, had promptly staked the greater part of it in certain Bourse speculations. She was quite as sorely in need of money as she had professed to be while in Manchester, but for more reasons than one, as David had uncomfortably suspected. Not only did her husband strip her of anything he could lay hands on, but a certain fair-haired Alsatian artist a good deal younger than herself had for some months been preying upon her. What his hold upon her precisely was. Father Lenoir, her director, when David went to see him, either could not or — because the matter was covered by the confessional seal — would not say. The artist, Brénart by name, was a handsome youth, with a droll facile

[338]

tongue, and a recklessness of temper matching her own. He became first known to her as one of her husband's drinking companions, then, dazzled by the wife's mad beauty, he began to haunt the handsome Madame Montjoie, as many other persons had haunted her before him, — with no particular results except to increase the arrogant self-complacency with which Louie bore herself among her Catholic friends.

In the first year of his passion, Brénart came into a small inheritance, much of which he spent on jewellery and other presents for his idol. She accepted them without scruple, and his hopes naturally rose high. But in a few months he ran through his money, his drinking habits, under Montjoie's lead, grew upon him, and he fell rapidly into a state of degradation which would have made it very easy for Louie to shake him off, had she been so minded.

But by this time he had, no doubt, a curious spell for her. He was a person of considerable gifts, an etcher of fantastic promise, a clever musician, and the owner of a humorous *carillon* of talk, to quote M. Brénart's word, which made life in his neighbourhood perpetually amusing for those, at any rate, who took the grossness of its themes as a matter of course. Louie found on the one hand that she could not do without him, in her miserable existence; on the other that if he was not to starve she must keep

him. His misfortunes revealed the fact that there was neither chivalry nor delicacy in him; and he learnt to live upon her with

[339]

surprising quickness, and on the most romantic pretexts.

So she made her pilgrimage to Manchester for money, and then she played with her money to make it more, on the Bourse. But clever as she was, luck was against her, and she lost. Her losses made her desperate. So too did the behaviour of her husband, who robbed her whenever he could, and spent most of his time on the pavements of Paris, dragging himself from one low drinking-shop to another, only coming home to cheat her out of fresh supplies, and goad his wife to hideous scenes of quarrel and violence, which frightened the life out of Cecile. Brénart, whom she could no longer subsidise, kept aloof, for mixed reasons of his own. And the landlord, not to be trifled with any longer, gave them summary notice of eviction.

While she was in these straits, Father Lenoir, who even during these months of vacillating passion and temptation had exercised a certain influence over her, came to call upon her one afternoon, being made anxious by her absence from Ste. Eulalie. He found a wild-eyed haggard woman in a half-dismantled apartment, whom, for the first time, he could not affect by any of those arts of persuasion or rebuke, in which his long experience as a guide of souls had trained him. She would tell him nothing either about her plans, or her husband; she did not respond to his skilful and reproachful comments upon her failure to give them assistance in a recent great function at Ste. Eulalie; nor

[340]

was she moved by the tone of solemn and fatherly exhortation into which he gradually passed. He left her, fearing the worst.

On the following morning she fled to the wretched house on the outskirts of Paris where Dora had found her. She went thither to escape from her husband; to avoid

the landlord's pursuit; to cut herself adrift from the clergy of Ste. Eulalie, and to concert with Brénart a new plan of life. But Brénart failed to meet her there, and, a very few days after the flight, Cecile, already worn to a shadow, sickened with diphtheria. Either the seeds were already in her when they left Paris, or she was poisoned by the half-finished drainage and general insanitary state of the quarter to which they had removed.

From the moment the child took to her bed, Louie fell into the blackest despair. She had often ill-used her daughter during these last months; the trembling child, always in the house, had again and again been made the scapegoat of her mother's miseries; but she no sooner threatened to die than Louie threw everything else in the world aside and was madly determined she should live.

She got a doctor, of an inferior sort, from the neighbourhood, and when he seemed to her to bungle, and the child got no better, she drove him out of the house with contumely. Then she herself tried to caustic Cecile's throat, or she applied some of the old-wives' remedies, suggested by the low servant she had taken.

[341]

The result was that the poor little victim was brought to the edge of the grave, and Louie, reduced to abjectness, went and humbled herself to the doctor and brought him back. This time he told her bluntly that the child was dying and nothing could save her. Then, in her extremity, she telegraphed to David. Her brother had written to her twice since the beginning of Lucy's illness; but when she sent her telegram, all remembrance of her sister-in-law had vanished from Louie's mind — Lucy might never have existed; and whether she was alive or dead mattered nothing.

When Dora came, she found the child speechless, and near the end. Tracheotomy had been performed, but its failure was already clear. It seemed a question of hours. John went off post-haste for a famous doctor. The great man came, agreed with the local practitioner that nothing more could be done, and that death was imminent. Louie, beside herself, first turned and rent him, and then fell in a dead faint beside Cecile's bed. While the nurse, whom John had also brought from Paris, was

tending both mother and daughter, Dora sent John — who in these years had acquired a certain smattering of foreign languages under the pressure of printing-room needs and David's counsel — to inquire for and fetch a priest. She was in an agony lest the child should die without the sacraments of her Church.

The priest came — a young man of a heavy peasant type — bearing the Host. Never did Dora forget that scene — the emaciated child gasping her life away,

[342]

the strange people, dimly seen amid the wreaths of incense, who seemed to her to have flocked in from the street in the wake of the priest, to look — the sacred words and gestures in the midst, which, because of the quick unintelligible Latin, she could only follow as a mystery of ineffable and saving power, the same, so she believed, for Anglican and Catholic — and by the bedside the sullen erect form of the mother, who could not be induced to take any part whatever in the ceremony.

But when it was all over, and the little procession which had brought the Host was forming once more, Louie thrust Dora and the nurse violently away from the bed, and bent her ear down to Cecile's mouth. She gave a wild and hideous cry; then drawing herself to her full height, with a tragic magnificence of movement she stretched out one shaking hand over the poor little wasted body, while with the other she pointed to the priest in his white officiating dress.

'Go out of this house! —go this *instant!* Who brought you in? Not I! I tell yon, —last night' — she flung the phrases out in fierce gasps —'I gave God the chance. I said to Him, Make Cecile well, and I'll behave myself —I'll listen to Father Lenoir. Much good I've got by it all this time! — but I will. I'll live on a crust, and I'll give all I can skin and scrape to those people at Ste. Eulalie. If not — then I'll go to the devil — *to the devil!* Do you hear? I swore that.'

Her voice sank to a hoarse whisper; she bent down, still keeping everyone at bay and at a distance from

[343]

her dead child — though Dora ran to her — her head turned over her shoulder, her glowing eyes of hatred fixed upon the priest.

‘She is mad!’ he said to himself, receding quickly, lest the sacred burden he bore should suffer any indignity.

At that moment she fell heavily on her knees beside the bed insensible, her dark head lying on Cecile’s arm. Dora, in a pale trance of terror, closed little Cecile’s weary eyes, the nurse cleared the room, and they laid Louie on her bed.

When she revived, she crawled to the place where Cecile lay in her white grave-dress strewn with flowers, and again put everyone away, locking herself in with the body. But the rules of interment in the case of infectious diseases are strict in France; the authorities concerned intervened; and after scenes of indescribable misery and violence, the little corpse was carried away, and, thanks to Dora’s and John’s care, received tender and reverent burial.

The mother was too exhausted to resist any more. When Dora came back from the funeral, the nurse told her that Madame Montjoie, after having refused all meat or drink for two days, had roused herself from what seemed the state of stupor in which the departure of the funeral procession had left her, had asked for brandy, which had been given her, and had then, of her own accord, swallowed a couple of opium pills, which

[344]

the doctor had so far vainly prescribed for her, and was now heavily asleep.

Dora went to her own bed, too tired to stand, yet inexpressibly relieved. Her bed was a heap of wraps contrived for her by the nurse on the floor of the lower room — a bare den, reeking of damp, which called itself the salon. But she had never rested anywhere with such helpless thankfulness. For some hours at least, agony and conflict were still, and she had a moment in which to weep for Lucy, the news of whose death had now lain for two days a dragging weight at her heart. Hateful memory! — she had

forced her way in to Louie with the letter, thinking in her innocence that the knowledge of the brother's bereavement must touch the sister, or at least momentarily divert her attention; and Louie had dashed it down with the inconceivable words, —Dora's cheek burnt with anguish and shame, as she tried to put them out of her mind for ever, —

‘Very well. Now, then, you can marry him! You know you've always wanted to!’

But at last that biting voice was hushed; there was not a sound in the house; the summer night descended gently on the wretched street, and in the midst of anxious discussion with herself as to how she and John were to get Louie to England, she fell asleep.

When Dora awoke, Louie was not in the house. After a few hours of opium-sleep, she must have noiselessly put together all her valuables and money, a few

[345]

trifles belonging to Cecile, and a small parcel of clothes, and have then slipped out through the garden door, and into a back lane or track, which would ultimately lead her down to the bank of the river. None of the three other persons sleeping in the house — Dora, the nurse, the old *bonne*, had heard a sound.

When John arrived in the morning, his practical common sense suggested a number of measures for Louie's pursuit, or for the discovery of her fate, should she have made away with herself, as he more than suspected —measures which were immediately taken by himself, or by the lawyer, Mr. O'Kelly.

Everything had so far been in vain. No trace of the fugitive — living or dead — could be found.

David, sitting with his arms on the deal table in the lower room, and his face in his hands, listened in almost absolute silence to the main facts of the story. When he looked up, it was to say, ‘Have you been to Father Lenoir?’

No. Neither Dora nor John knew any tiling of Father Lenoir.

David went off at once. The good priest was deeply touched and overcome by the story, but not astonished. He first told David of the existence of Brénart, and search was instantly made for the artist. He, too, was missing, but the police, whose cordial assistance David, by the help of Lord Driffield's important friends in Paris, was able to secure, were confident of immediate discovery. Day after day passed, however; innumerable

[346]

false clues were started; but at the end of some weeks Louie's fate was as much of a secret as ever.

Dora and John had, of course, gone back to England directly after David's arrival; and he now felt that his child and his work called him. He returned home towards the middle of August, leaving the search for his sister in Mr. O'Kelly's hands.

For five months David remained doggedly at his work in Prince's Street. John watched him silently from day to day, showing him a quiet devotion which sometimes brought his old comrade's hand upon his shoulder in a quick touch of gratitude, or a flash to eyes heavy with broken sleep. The winter was a bad one for trade; the profits made by Grieve & Co., even on much business, were but small; and in the consultative council of employés which David had established the chairman constantly showed a dreaminess or an irritability in difficult circumstances which in earlier days would have cost him influence and success. But the men, who knew him well, looked at each other askance, and either spoke their minds or bore with him as seemed best. They were well aware that while wages everywhere else had been cut down, theirs were undiminished; that the profits from the second-hand book trade which remained nominally outside the profit-sharing partnership were practically all spent in furthering the social ends of it; and that the master, in his desolate house, with his two maid-servants, one of them

[347]

his boy's nurse, lived as modestly as any of them, yet with help always to spare for the sick and the un- fortunate. To a man they remained loyal to the firm and the scheme; but among even the best of them there was a curious difference of opinion as to David and his ways. They profited by them, and they would see him through; but there was an uncomfortable feeling that, if such ideas were to spread, they might cut both ways and interfere too much with the easy living which the artisan likes and desires as much as any other man.

Meanwhile, those who have followed the history of David Grieve with any sympathy will not find it difficult to believe that this autumn and winter were with him a time of intense mental anguish and depression. The shock and tragedy of Louie's disappearance following on the prolonged nervous exhaustion caused by Lucy's struggle for life had brought him into a state similar to that in which his first young grief had left him; only with this difference, that the nature being now deeper and richer was but the more capable of suffering. The passion of religious faith which had carried him through Lucy's death had dwindled by natural reaction; he believed, but none the less he walked in darkness. The cruelty of his wife's fate, meditated upon through lonely and restless nights, tortured beyond bearing a soul made for pity; and every now and then wild fits of remorse for his original share in Louie's sins and misfortunes would descend upon him, and leave no access to reason.

[348]

His boy, his work and his books, these were ultimately his protections from himself. Sandy climbed about him, or got into mischief with salutary frequency. The child slept beside his father at night, and in the evenings was always either watching for him at the gate or standing thumb in mouth with his face pressed against the window, and his bright eye scanning the dusk.

For the rest, after a first period of utter numbness and languor, David was once more able to read, and he read with voracity — science, philosophy, *belles lettres*. Two subjects, however, held his deepest mind all through, whatever might be added to them

— the study of ethics, in their bearing upon religious conceptions, and the study of Christian origins. His thoughts about them found occasional outlet, either in his talks with Ancrum — whose love soothed him, and whose mind, with all its weaknesses and its strong Catholic drift, he had long found to be infinitely freer and more hospitable in the matter of ideas than the average Anglican mind — or in his journal.

A few last extracts from the journal may be given. It should be remembered that the southern element in him made such a mode of expression more easy and natural to him than it ever can be to most Englishmen.

‘November 2nd. — It seems to me that last night was the first night since she died that I have not dreamt of

[349]

her. As a rule, I am always with her in sleep, and for that reason I am the more covetous of the sleep which comes to me so hardly. It is a second life. Yet before her illness, during our married life, I hardly knew what it was to dream.

‘Two nights ago I thought I was standing beside her. She was lying on the long couch under the sycamore tree whither we used to carry her. At first, everything was wholly lifelike and familiar. Sandy was somewhere near. She had the grey camel’s hair shawl over her shoulders, which I remember so well, and the white frilled cap drawn loosely together under her chin, over bandages and dressings, as usual. She asked me to fetch something for her from the house, and I went, full of joy. There seemed to be a strange mixed sense at the bottom of my heart that I had somehow lost her and found her again.

‘When I came back, nurse was there, and everything was changed. Nurse looked at me with meaning, startled eyes, as much as to say, “Look closely, it is not as you think.” And as I went up to her, lying still and even smiling on her conch, there was an imperceptible raising of her little white hand as though to keep me off. Then in a flash I saw that it was not my living Lucy; that it could only be her spirit. I felt an awful

sense of separation and yet of yearning; sitting down on one of the mossy stones beside her, I wept bitterly, and so woke, bathed in tears.

‘... It has often seemed to me lately that certain

[350]

elements in the Resurrection stories may be originally traced to such experiences as these. I am irresistibly drawn to believe that the strange and mystic scene beside the lake, in the appendix chapter to the Gospel of St. John, arose in some such way. There is the same mixture of elements — of the familiar with the ghostly, the trivial with the passionate and exalted — which my own consciousness has so often trembled under in these last visionary months. The well-known lake, the old scene of fishers and fishing-boats, and on the shore the mysterious figure of the Master, the same, yet not the same, the little, vivid, dream-like details of the fire of coals, the broiled fish, and bread, the awe and longing of the disciples — it is borne in upon me with extraordinary conviction that the whole of it sprang, to begin with, from the dream of grief and exhaustion. Then, in an age which attached a peculiar and mystical importance to dreams, the beautiful thrilling fancy passed from mouth to mouth, became almost immediately history instead of dream, — just as here and there a parable misunderstood has taken the garb of an event, — was after a while added to and made more precise in the interest of apologetics, or of doctrine, or of the simple love of elaboration, and so at last found a final resting-place as an epilogue to the fourth Gospel.’

November 4th. — To-night I have dared to read again Browning’s “Rabbi ben Ezra.” For months I have not

[351]

been able to read it, or think of it, though for days and weeks towards the end of her life it seemed to be graven on my heart.

Look not thou down, but up!

To uses of a cup,
The festal board, lamp's flash and trumpet's peal,
The new wine's foaming glow.
The Master's lips a-glow!
Thou heaven's consummate cup, what needs't thou
with earth's wheel?

'Let me think again, my God, of that astonishing ripening of her last days! — of all her little acts of love and gratitude towards me, towards her nurse, towards the people in the house, who had helped to tend her — of her marvellous submission, when once the black cloud of the fear of death, and the agony of parting from life had left her.

'And such facts alone in the world's economy are to have no meaning, point no- whither? I could as soon believe it as that, in the physical universe, the powers of the magnet, or the flash of the lightning, are isolated and meaningless — tell us nothing and lead nowhere.'

'*November 10th.* — In the old days —there is a passage of the kind in an earlier part of this journal —I was constantly troubled, and not for myself only, but for others, the poor and unlearned especially, who, as it seemed to me, would lose most in the crumbling of the Christian mythology — as to the intellectual difficulties

[352]

of the approach to God. All this philosophical travail of two thousand years — and so many doubts and darkneses! A world athirst for preaching, and nothing simple or clear to preach — when once the miracle-child of Bethlehem had been dispossessed. And now it is daylight-plain to me that in the simplest act of loving self-surrender there is the germ of all faith, the essence of all lasting religion. Quicken human service, purify and strengthen human love, and have no fear but that the conscience will find its God! For all the time this quickening and this purification are His work in thee. Around thee are the institutions, the ideals, the know- ledge and beliefs, ethical or intellectual, in which that work, that life, have been so far fragmentarily and partially realised. Submit thyself

and press forward. Thou knowest well what it means to be *better*: more pure, more loving, more self-denying. And in thy struggle to be all these, God cometh to thee and abides. . . . *But the greatest of these is love!*'

'*November 20th.* —To-day I have finished the last of my New Testament tracts, the last at any rate for a time. While Ancrum lives I have resolved to suspend them. They trouble him deeply; and I, who owe him so much, will not voluntarily add to his burden. His wife is with him, a somewhat heavy, dark-faced woman, with a slumbrous eye, which may, however, be capable of kindling. They have left Mortimer Street, and have gone to live in a little house on the road to

[353]

Cheadle. He seems perfectly happy, and though the doctor is discouraging, I at least can see no change for the worse. She sits by him and reads or works, without much talking, but is all the time attentive to his lightest movement. Friends send them flowers which brighten the little house, his "boys" visit him in the evenings, he is properly fed, and altogether I am more happy about him than I have been for long. It required considerable courage, this move, on her part; for there are a certain number of people still left who knew Ancrum at college, and remember the story; and those who believed him a bachelor are of course scandalised and wondering. But the talk, whatever it is, does not seem to molest them much. He offered to leave Manchester, but she would not let him. "What would he do away from you and his boys?" she said to me. There is a heroism in it all the same.

'... So my New Testament work may rest a while. — During these autumn weeks, it has helped me through some terrible hours.

'When I look back over the mass of patient labour which has accumulated during the present century round the founder of Christianity and the origins of his society — when I compare the text-books of the day with the text-books of sixty years ago — I no longer wonder at the empty and ignorant arrogance with which the French

eighteenth century treated the whole subject. The first stone of the modern building had not been laid when Voltaire wrote, unless perhaps in the Wolfenbüttel

[354]

fragments. He knew, in truth, no more than the Jesuits, much less in fact than the better men among them.

‘... It has been like the unravelling of a piece of fine and ancient needlework — and so discovering the secrets of its make and craftsmanship. A few loose ends were first followed up; then gradually the whole tissue has been involved, till at last the nature and quality of each thread, the purpose and the skill of each stitch, are becoming plain, and what was mystery rises into knowledge.

‘... But how close and fine a web! — and how difficult and patient the process by which Christian reality has to be grasped! There is no short cut — one must toil.

‘But after one has toiled, what are the rewards? Truth first — which is an end in itself and not a means to anything beyond. Then — the great figure of Christianity given back to you — with something at least of the first magic, the first “natural truth” of look and tone. Through and beyond dogmatic overlay, and Messianic theory and wonder-loving addition, to recover, at least fragmentarily, the actual voice, the first meaning, which is also the eternal meaning, of Jesus — Paul — John”!

‘Finally — a conception of Christianity in which you discern once more its lasting validity and significance — its imperishable place in human life. It becomes simply that preaching of the Kingdom of God which belongs to and affects you — you, the modern European

[355]

— just as Greek philosophy, Stoic or Cynic, was that preaching of it which belonged to and affected Epictetus.’

‘*November 24th.* —Mr. O’Kelly writes to me to-day his usual hopeless report. No news! I do not even know whether she is alive, and I can do nothing — absolutely nothing.

‘Yes — let me correct myself, there is some news — of an event which, if we could find her, might simplify matters a little. Montjoie is dead in hospital — at the age of thirty-six —

‘Is there *any* other slavery and chain like that of temperament? As I look back on the whole course of my relation to Louie, I am conscious only of a sickening sense of utter failure. Our father left her to me, and I have not been able to hold her back from — nay, I have helped to plunge her into the most obvious and commonplace ruin. Yet I am always asking myself, if it were to do again, could I do any better? Has any other force developed in me which would make it possible for me now to break through the barriers between her nature and mine, to love her sincerely, asking for nothing again, to help her to a saner and happier life?

‘If sometimes I dream that so it is, it is to her I owe it — to her whom I carry on my bosom, and whose hand did once, or so it seemed, unlock to me the gates of God. *Lucy! my Lucy!*

[356]

‘. . . All my past life becomes sometimes intolerable to me. I can see nothing in it that is not tarnished and flecked with black stains of egotism, pride, hardness, moral indolence.

‘And the only reparation possible, "Be ye transformed by the renewing of your minds," at which my fainting heart sinks.

‘Sometimes I find much comfort in the saying of a lonely thinker, "Let us humbly accept from God even our own nature; not that we are called upon to accept the evil and the disease in us, but let us accept ourselves in spite of the evil and the disease."

‘*Que vivre est difficile — ô mon coeur fatigué!*’

[357]

CHAPTER XI

BY the end of December David Grieve was near breaking down. Dr. Mildmay insisted brusquely on his going away.

‘As far as I can see you will live to be an old man.’ he said, ‘but if you go on like this, it will be with shattered powers. You are driving yourself to death, yet at the present moment you have no natural driving force. It is all artificial, a matter of will. Do, for heaven’s sake, get away from these skies and these streets, and leave all work and all social reforms behind. The first business of the citizen — prate as you like! — is to keep his nerves and his digestion in going order.’

David laughed and yielded. The advice, in fact, corresponded to an inward thirst, and had, moreover, a coincidence to back it. In one of the Manchester papers two or three mornings before he had seen the advertisement of a farm to let, which had set vibrating all his passion for and memory of the moorland. It was a farm about half a mile from Needham Farm, on

[358]

one of the lower slopes of Kinder Low. It had belonged to a peasant owner, lately dead. The heirs wished to sell, but failing a purchaser were willing to let on a short lease.

It was but a small grazing farm, and the rent was low. David went to the agent, took it at once, and in a few days, to the amazement of Reuben and Hannah, to whom he wrote only the night before he arrived, he and Sandy, and a servant, were established with a minimum of furniture, but a sufficiency of blankets and coals, in two or three rooms of the little grey-walled house.

‘Well, it caps me, it do!’ Hannah said to herself, in her astonishment as she stood on her own doorstep the day after the arrival, and watched the figures of David and Sandy disappearing along the light crisp snow of the nearer fields in the direction of

the Red Brook and the sheep-fold. They had looked in to ask for Reuben, and had gone in pursuit of him.

What on earth should make a man in the possession of his natural senses leave a warm town-house in January, and come to camp in 'owd Ben's' farm, was, indeed, past Hannah's divination. In reality, no sudden resolve could have been happier. Sandy was a hardy little fellow, and with the first breath of the moorland wind David felt a load, which had been growing too heavy to bear, lifting from his breast. His youth, his manhood, reasserted themselves. The bracing clearness

[359]

of what seemed to be the setting-in of a long frost put a new life into him; winter's 'bright and intricate device 'of ice-fringed stream, of rimy grass, of snow-clad moor, of steel-blue skies, filled him once more with natural joy, carried him out of himself. He could not keep himself indoors; he went about with Reuben or the shepherd, after the sheep; he fed the cattle at Needham Farm, and brought his old knowledge to bear on the rearing of a sickly calf; he watched for the grouse, or he carried his pockets full of bread for the few blackbirds or moor-pippits that cheered his walks into the fissured solitudes of the great Peak plateau, walks which no one to whom every inch of the ground was not familiar dared have ventured, seeing how misleading and treacherous even light snow-drifts may become in the black bog-land of these high and lonely moors; or he toiled up the side of the Scout with Sandy on his back, that he might put the boy on one of the boulders beside the top of the Downfall, and, holding him fast, bid him look down at the great icicles which marked its steep and waterless bed, gleaming in the short-lived sun.

The moral surroundings, too, of the change were cheering. There, over the brow, in the comfortable little cottage, where he had long since placed her, with a woman to look after her, was Margaret — quite childish and out of her mind, but happy and well cared for. He and Sandy would trudge over from time to time to see her, he carrying the boy in a plaid slung round his

[360]

shoulders when the snow was deep. Once Sandy went to Frimley with the Needham Farm shepherd, and when David came to fetch him he found the boy and Margaret playing cat's-cradle together by the fire, and the eagerness in Sandy's pursed lips, and on the ethereally blanched and shrunken face of Margaret, brought the tears to David's eyes, as he stood smiling and looking on. But she did not suffer; for memory was gone; only the gentle 'imperishable child' remained.

And at Needham Farm he had never known the atmosphere so still. Reuben was singularly cheerful and placid. Whether by the mere physical weakening of years, or by some slow softening of the soul, Hannah and her ways were no longer the daily scourge and perplexity to her husband they had once been. She was a harsh and tyrannous woman still, but not now openly viperish or cruel. With the disappearance of old temptations, the character had, to some extent, righted itself. Her sins of avarice and oppression towards Sandy's orphans had raised no Nemesis that could be traced, either within or without. It is doubtful whether she ever knew what self-reproach might mean; in word, at any rate, she was to the end as loudly confident as at the first. Nevertheless it might certainly be said that at sixty she was a better and more tolerable human being than she had been at fifty.

'Aye, if yo do but live long enoof, yo get past t' bad bits o' t' road,' Reuben said one night, with a long breath, to David, and then checked himself, brought up

[361]

either by a look at his nephew's mourning dress, or by a recollection of what David had told him of Louie the night before.

It troubled Reuben indeed, something in the old fashion, that his wife would show no concern whatever for Louie when he repeated to her the details of that disappearance whereof so far he and she had known only the bare fact.

‘Aye, I thowt she ’d bin and married soom mak o’rabblement,’ remarked Hannah. ‘Yo doant suppose ony decent mon ud put up wi her. What Davy wants wi lookin for her I doant know. He’ll be hard-set when he’s fand her, I should think.’

She was equally impervious and sarcastic with regard to David’s social efforts. Her sharp tongue exercised itself on the ‘poor way ‘in which he seemed to live, and when Reuben repeated to her, with some bewilderment, the facts which she had egged him on to get out of David, her scorn knew no bounds.

‘Weel, it’s like t’ Bible after aw, Hannah,’ said Reuben, perplexed and remonstrating; ‘theer ‘s things, yo’ll remember, abeawt gien t’ coat off your back, an sellin aw a mon has, an th’ loike, at fairly beats me soomtimes.’

‘Oh — go long wi yo!’ said Hannah in high wrath. ‘He an his loike ‘ll mak a halliblash of us aw soon, wi their silly faddle, an pamperin o’ workin men, wha never wor an never will be noa better nor they should be. But — thank the Lord — *I’ll* not be theer to see.’

[362]

And after this communication she found it very difficult to treat David civilly.

But to David’s son — to Sandy — Hannah Grieve capitulated, for the first and only time in her life.

On the second and third day after his arrival, Sandy came over with the servant to ask Hannah’s help in some small matter of the new household. As they neared the farm door, Tim, the aged Tim, who was slouching behind, was suddenly set upon by a new and ill-tempered collie of Reuben’s, who threatened very soon to shake the life out of his poor toothless victim. But Sandy, who had a stick, rushed at him, his cheeks and eyes glowing with passion.

‘Get away! you great big dog, you! and leave my middle-sized dog alone!’

And he belaboured and pulled at the collie, without a thought of fear, till the farm-man and Hannah came and separated the combatants, — stalking into the farm kitchen afterwards in a speechless rage at the cowardly injustice which had been done to

Tim. As he sat in the big rocking-chair, fiercely cuddling Tim and sucking his thumb, his stormy breath subsiding by degrees, Hannah thought him, as she confessed to the only female friend she possessed in the world, 'the pluckiest and bonniest little grig i' th' coontry side.'

Thenceforward, so far as her queer temper would allow, she became his nurse and slave, and David, with all the memorials of his own hard childhood about him, could not believe his eyes, when he found Sandy

[363]

established day after day in the Needham Farm kitchen, sucking his thumb in a corner of the settle, and ordering Hannah about with the airs of a three-tailed bashaw. She stuffed him with hot girdle-cakes; she provided for him a store of 'humbugs,' the indigenous sweet of the district, which she made and baked with her own hands, and had not made before for forty years; she took him about with her, 'rootin,' as she expressed it, after the hens and pigs and the calves; till, Sandy's exactions growing with her compliance, the common fate of tyrants overtook him. He one day asked too much and his slave rebelled. David saw him come in one afternoon, and found him a minute or two after viciously biting the blind-cord in the parlour, in a black temper. When his father inquired what was the matter, Sandy broke out in a sudden wail of tears.

'Why *can* 't! she be a Kangawoo when I want her to?'

Whereupon David, with the picture of Hannah's grim figure, cap and all, before his mind's eye, went into the first fit of side-shaking laughter that had befallen him for many and many a month.

On a certain gusty afternoon towards the middle of February, David was standing alone beside the old Smithy. The frost, after a temporary thaw, had set in again, there had been tolerably heavy snow the night before, and it was evident from the shifting of the wind

[364]

and the look of the clouds that were coming up from the north-east over the Scout that another fall was impending. But the day had been fine, and the sun, setting over the Cheshire hills, threw a flood of pale rose into the white bosom of the Scout and on the heavy clouds piling themselves above it. It was a moment of exquisite beauty and wildness. The sunlit snow gleamed against the stormy sky; the icicles lining the steep channel of the Downfall shone jagged and rough between the white and smoothly rounded banks of moor, or the snowwreathed shapes of the grit boulders j to his left was the murmur of the Red Brook creeping between its frozen banks; while close beside him about twenty of the moor sheep were huddling against the southern wall of the Smithy in prescience of the coming storm. Almost within reach of his stick was the pan of his childish joy, the water left in it by the December rains frozen hard and white; and in the crevice of the wall he had just discovered the mouldering remains of a toy-boat.

He stood and looked out over the wide winter world, rejoicing in its austerity, its solemn beauty. Physically he was conscious of recovered health; and in the mind also there was a new energy of life and work. Nature seemed to say to him, 'Do but keep thy heart open to me, and I have a myriad aspects and moods wherewith to interest and gladden and teach thee to the end; 'while, as his eye wandered to the point where Manchester lay hidden on the horizon,

[365]

the world of men, of knowledge, of duty, summoned him back to it with much of the old magic and power in the call. His grief, his love, no man should take from him; but he must play his part.

Yes — he and Sandy must go home — and soon. Yet even as he so decided, the love of the familiar scene, its freedom, its loneliness, its unstainedness, rose high within him. He stood lost in a trance of memory. Here he and Louie had listened to 'Lias; there, far away amid the boulders of the Downfall, they had waited for the witch; among those snow-laden bushes yonder Louie had hidden when she played Jenny Crum

for the discomfiture of the prayer-meeting; and it was on the slope at his feet that she had pushed the butter-scotch into his mouth, the one and only sign of affection she had ever given him, that he could remember, in all their forlorn childhood.

As these things rose before him, the moor, the wind, the rising voice of the storm became to him so many channels, whereby the bitter memory of his sister rushed upon him and took possession. Every- thing spoke of her, suggested her. Then with inexorable force his visualising gift carried him on past her childhood to the scenes of her miserable marriage; and as he thought of her child's death, the desolation and madness of her flight, the mystery of her fate, his soul was flooded once more for the hundredth time with anguish and horror. Here in this place where their childish lives had been so closely intertwined, he could

[366]

not resign himself for ever to ignorance, to silence; his whole being went out in protest, in passionate remorseful desire.

The wind was beginning to blow fiercely; the rosy- glow was gone; darkness was already falling. Wild gusts swept from time to time round the white amphitheatre of moor and crag; the ghostly sounds of night and storm were on the hills. Suddenly it was to him as though he heard his name called from a great distance — breathed shrilly and lingeringly along the face of the Scout.

‘David!’

It was Louie's voice. The illusion was so strong that, as he raised his hand to his ear, turning towards the Downfall, whence the sound seemed to come, he trembled from head to foot.

‘David!’

Was it the call of some distant boy or shepherd? He could not tell, could not collect himself. He sank down on one of the grit-boulders by the snow-wreathed door of the Smithy and sat there long, heedless of the storm and cold, his mind working, a sudden purpose rising and unfolding, with a mysterious rapidity and excitement.

Early on the following morning he made his way down through the deep snow to the station, having first asked Hannah to take charge of Sandy for a day or two; and by the night mail he left London for Paris.

[367]

It was not till he walked into Mr. O’Kelly’s office, on the ground floor of a house in the Rue d’Assas, at about eleven o’clock on the next day, that he was conscious of any reaction. Then for a bewildered instant he wondered why he had come, and what he was to say.

But to his amazement the lawyer rose at once, throwing up his hands with the gesture of one who notes some singular and unexpected stroke of good fortune.

‘This is most extraordinary, Mr. Grieve! I have not yet signed the letter on my desk — there it is! — summoning you to Paris. We have discovered Madame Montjoie! As constantly happens, we have been pursuing inquiries in all sorts of difficult and remote quarters, and she is here — at our doors, living for some weeks past, at any rate, without any disguise, at *Barbizon*, of all places in the world! *Barbizon près Fontainebleau*. You know it?’

David sat down.

‘Yes,’ he said, after an instant. ‘I know it. Is he — is that man Brénart there?’

‘Certainly. He has taken a miserable studio, and is making, or pretending to make, some winter studies of the forest. I hear that Madame Montjoie looks ill and worn; the neighbours say the *ménage* is a very uncomfortable one, and not likely to last long. I wish I had better news for you, Mr. Grieve.’

And the lawyer, remembering the handsome hollow-

[368]

eyed boy of twenty who had first asked his help, studied with irrepressible curiosity the man's noble storm-beaten look and fast grizzling hair, as David sat before him with his head bent and his hat in his hands.

They talked a while longer, and then David said, rising:

'Can I get over there to-night? The snow will be deep in the forest.'

'I imagine they will keep that main road to Barbizon open in some fashion,' said the lawyer. 'You may find a sledge. Let me know how you speed and whether I can assist you. But, I fear,'— he shrugged his shoulders — 'in the end this wild life *gets into the hlood*. I have seen it so often.'

He spoke with the freedom and knowledge of one who had observed Louie Montjoie with some closeness for eleven years. David said nothing in answer; but at the door he turned to ask a question.

'You can't tell me anything of the habits of this man — this Brénart?'

'Stop!' said the lawyer, after a moment's thought; 'I remember this detail — my agent told me that M. Brénart was engaged in some work for 'D—— et Cie'— he named a great picture-dealing firm on the Boulevard St. Germain, famous for their illustrated books and *éditions de luxe*. — 'He did not hear what it was, but — ah! I remember, — it has taken him occasionally to Paris, or so he says, and it has been these absences which have led to some of the worst scenes between him and

[369]

your sister. I suppose she put a jealous woman's interpretation on them. You want to see her alone? — when this man is out of the way? I have an idea: take my card and your own to this person — 'he wrote out an address — 'he is one of the junior partners in "D—— et Cie;" I know him, and I got his firm the sale of a famous picture. He will do me a good turn. Ask him what the work is that M. Brénart is doing, and when he expects him next in Paris. It is possible you may get some useful information.'

David took the card and walked at once to the Boulevard St. Germain, which was close by. He was civilly received by the man to whom O'Kelly had sent him, and

learned from him that Brénart was doing for the firm a series of etchings illustrating the forest in winter, and intended to make part of a great book on Fontainebleau and the Barbizon school. They were expecting the last batch from him, were indeed desperately impatient for them. But he was a difficult fellow to deal with — an exceedingly clever artist, but totally untrustworthy. In his last letter to them he had spoken of bringing the final instalment to them, and returning some corrected proofs by February 16 — ‘to-morrow, I see,’ said the speaker, glancing at an almanac on his office table. ‘Well, we may get them, and we mayn’t. If we don’t, we shall have to take strong measures. And now. Monsieur, I think I have told you all I can tell you of our relations to M. Brénart.’

David bowed and took his leave. He made his way

[370]

through the great shop with its picture-covered walls and its floors dotted with stands on which lay exposed the new etchings and engravings of the season. In front of him a lady in black was also making her way to the door and the street. No one was attending her, and instinctively he hurried forward to open the heavy glass door for her. As he did so a sudden sharp pre-sentiment shot through him. The door swung to behind them, and he found himself in the covered entrance of the shop face to face with Elise Delaunay.

The meeting was so startling that neither could disguise the shock of it. He took off his hat mechanically; she grew white and leant against the glass window.

‘You! — how can it be you?’ she said in a quick whisper, then recovering herself — ‘Monsieur Grieve, old associations are painful, and I am neither strong — nor — nor stoical. Which way are you walking?’

‘Towards the Rue de Seine,’ he said, thrown into a bewildering mist of memory by her gesture, the crisp agitated decision of her manner. ‘And you?’

‘I also. We will walk a hundred yards together. What are you in Paris for?’

‘I am here on some business of my sister’s,’ he said evasively.

She raised her eyes, and looked at him long and sharply. He, on his side, saw, with painful agitation, that her youth was gone, but not her grace, not her singular and wilful charm. The little face under her

[371]

black hat was lined and sallow, and she was startlingly thin. The mouth had lost its colour, and gained instead the hard shrewdness of a woman left to battle with the world and poverty alone; but the eyes had their old plaintive trick; the dead gold of the hair, the rings and curls of it against the white temples, were still as beautiful as they had ever been; and the light form moved beside him with the same quick floating gait.

‘You have grown much older,’ she said abruptly. ‘You look as if you had suffered — but what of that? — *C’est comme tout le monde.*’

She withdrew her look a moment, with a little bitter gesture, then she resumed, drawn on by a curiosity and emotion she could not control.

‘Are you married?’

‘Yes, but my wife is dead.’

She gave a start; the first part of the answer had not prepared her for the second.

‘*Ah, mon Dieu!*’ she said, ‘always grief — always ! Is it long?’

‘Eight months. I have a boy. And you? — I heard sad news of you once — the only time.’

‘You might well,’ she said, with a half-ironical accent, driving the point of her umbrella restlessly into the crevices of the stones, as they slowly crossed a paved street. ‘My husband is only a cripple, confined to his chair, — I am no longer an artist but an artisan, — I have not painted a picture for years, — but what I paint sells for a trifle, and there is soup in the pot — of

[372]

a sort. For the rest I spend my life in making tisane^ in lifting weights too heavy for me, and bargaining for things to eat.'

'But — you are not unhappy!' he said to her boldly, with a change of tone.

She stopped, struck by the indescribable note in his voice. They had turned into a side street, whither she had unconsciously led him. She stood with her eyes on the ground, then she lifted them once more, and there was in them a faint beautiful gleam, which transformed the withered and sharpened face.

'You are quite right, ' she said, 'if he will only live. He depends on me for everything. It is like a child, but it consoles. Adieu!'

That night David found himself in the little *auberge* at Barbizon. He had discovered a sledge to take him across the forest, and he and his driver had pushed their way under a sky of lead and through whirling clouds of fresh sleet past the central beech- wood, where the great boles stood straight and bare amid fantastic masses of drift; through the rock and fir region, where all was white, and the trees drooped under their wintry load; and beneath withered and leaning oaks, throwing gaunt limbs here and there from out the softening effacing mantle of the snow. Night fell when the journey was half over, and as the lights of the sledge flashed from side to side into these lonely fastnesses of cold, how was it possible to believe that summer and joy had ever tabernacled here?

[373]

He was received at the inn, as his driver had brought him — with astonishment. But Barbizon has been long accustomed, beyond most places in France, to the eccentricities of the English and American visitor; and being a home of artists, it understands the hunt for 'impressions,' and easily puts up with the unexpected. Before a couple of hours were over, David was installed in a freezing room, and was being discussed in the kitchen, where his arrival produced a certain animation, as the usual English madman in quest of a sensation, and no doubt ready to pay for it.

There were, however, three other guests in the inn, as he found, when he descended for dinner. They were all artists — young, noisy, *bons camarades*, and of a rough and humble social type. To them the winter at Barbizon was as attractive as anywhere else. Life at the inn was cheap, and free; they had the digestion of ostriches, eating anything that was put before them, and drinking oceans of red wine at ten sous a litre; on bad days they smoked, fed, worked at their pictures or played coarse practical jokes on each other and the people of the inn; in fine weather there was always the forest to be exploited, and the chance of some happy and profitable inspiration.

They stared at David a good deal during the *bifteck*, the black pudding which seemed to be a staple dish of the establishment, and the *omelette aux fines herbes*, which the landlord's wife had added in honour of the stranger.

[374]

One of them, behind the shelter of his glasses, drew the outline of the Englishman's head and face on the table-cloth, and showed it to his neighbour.

'Poetical, grand style, *hein*?'

The other nodded carelessly. '*Pourtant — l'hiver lui plait*,' he hummed under his breath, having some lines of Hugo's, which he had chosen as a motto for a picture, running in his head.

After dinner everybody gathered round the great fire, which the servant had piled with logs, while the flames, and the wreaths of smoke from the four pipes alternately revealed and concealed the rough sketches of all sorts — landscape, portrait, genre — legacies of by-gone visitors, wherewith the walls of the *salle à manger* were covered. David sat in his corner smoking, ready enough to give an account of his journey across the forest, and to speak when he was spoken to.

As soon as the strangeness of the new-comer had a little worn off, the three young fellows plunged into a flood of amusing gossip about the storm and the blocking of the roads, the scarcity of food in Barbizon, the place in general, and its inhabitants. David fell silent after a while, stiffening under a presentiment which was soon realised.

He heard his sister's wretched lot discussed with shouts of laughter — the chances of Brénart's escape from the mistress he had already wearied of and deceived — the perils of 'la Montjoie's 'jealousy 'Il veut bien se débarrasser d'elle — mais on ne plaisante pas avec une tigresse!' said one of the

[375]

speakers. So long as there was information to be got which might serve him he sat motionless, withdrawn into the dark, forcing himself to listen. When the talk became mere scurrility and noise, he rose and went out.

He passed through the courtyard of the inn, and turned down the village street. The storm had gone down, and there were a few stars amid the breaking clouds. Here and there a light shone from the low houses on either hand; the snow, roughly shovelled from the foot pavements, lay piled in heaps along the roadway, the white roofs shone dimly against the wild sky. He passed Madame Pyat's *maisonnette* pausing a moment to look over the wall. Not a sign of life in the dark building, and, between him and it, great drifts of snow choking up and burying the garden. A little further on, as he knew, lay the goal of his quest. He easily made out the house from Mr. O'Kelly's descriptions, and he lingered a minute, on the footway, under an overhanging roof to look at it. It was just a labourer's cottage standing back a little from the street, and to one side rose a high wooden addition which he guessed to be the studio. Through the torn blind came the light of a lamp, and as he stood there, himself invisible in his patch of darkness, he heard voices — an altercation, a woman's high shrill note.

Then he crept back to the inn vibrating through all his being to the shame of those young fellows' talk, the incredible difficulty of the whole enterprise. Could he

[376]

possibly make any impression upon her whatever? What was done was done; and it would be a crime on his part to jeopardise in the smallest degree the whole-some

brightness of Sandy's childhood by any rash proposals which it might be wholly beyond his power to carry out.

He carried up a basket of logs to his room, made them blaze, and crouched over them till far into the night. But in the end the doubt and trouble of his mind subsided; his purpose grew clear again. 'It was my own voice that spoke to me on the moor,' he thought, 'the voice of my own best life.'

About eight o'clock, with the first light of the morning, he was roused by bustle and noise under his window. He got up, and, looking out, saw two sledges standing before the inn, in the cold grey light. Men were busy harnessing a couple of horses to each, and there were a few figures, muffled in great coats and carrying bags and wraps, standing about.

'They are going over to Fontainebleau station,' he thought; 'if that man keeps his appointment in Paris to-day, he will go with them.'

As the words passed through his mind, a figure came striding up from the lower end of the street, a young fair-haired man in a heavy coat lined with sheepskin. His delicately made face — naturally merry and *bon enfant* — was flushed and scowling. He climbed into one of the sledges, complained of the lateness of the start, swore at the ostler, who made him take

[377]

another seat on the plea that the one he had chosen was engaged, and finally subsided into a moody silence, pulling at his moustache, and staring out over the snow, till at last the signal was given, and the sledges flew off on the Fontainebleau road, under a shower of snowballs which a group of shivering bright-eyed urchins on their way to school threw after them, as soon as the great whips were at a safe distance.

David dressed and descended.

'Who was that fair-haired gentleman in the first sledge?' he casually asked of the landlord who was bringing some smoking hot coffee into the *salle à manger*.

‘That was a M. Brénart, monsieur, ‘ said the landlord, cheerfully, absorbed all the while in the laying of his table. ‘*C’est un drôle de corps, M. Brénart.* I don’t take to him much myself; and as for madame — *qui n’est pas madame!*’

He shrugged his shoulders, saw that there were no fresh rolls, and departed with concern to fetch them.

David ate and drank. He would give her an hour yet.

When his watch told him that the time was come, he went out slowly, inquiring on the way if there would be any means of getting to Paris later in the day. Yes, the landlord thought a conveyance of some sort could be managed — if monsieur would pay for it!

A few minutes later David knocked at the door of

[378]

Brénart’s house. He could get no answer at all, and at last he tried the latch. It yielded to his hand, and he went in.

There was no one in the bare kitchen, but there were the remains of a fire, and of a meal. Both the crockery on the table and the few rough chairs and stools the room contained struck him as being in great disorder. There were two doors at the back. One led into a back room which was empty, the other down a few steps into a garden. He descended the steps and saw the long wooden erection of the studio stretching to his left. There was a door in the centre of its principal wall, which was ajar. He went up to it and softly pushed it open. There, at the further end, huddled over an iron stove, her face buried in her hands, her shoulders shaken with fierce sobs, was Louie.

He closed the door behind him, and at the sound she turned, hastily. When she saw who it was she gave a cry, and, sinking back on her low canvas chair, she lay staring at him, and speechless. Her eyes were red with weeping; her beauty was a wreck; and in face of the despair which breathed from her, and from her miserable surroundings, all doubt, all repulsion, all condemnation fled from the brother’s heart.

The iron in his soul melted. He ran up to her, and kneeling beside her, he put his arms round her, as he had never done in his life.

‘Oh you poor thing — you poor thing!’ he cried,

[379]

scarcely knowing what he said. He took her worn, tear-stained face, and, laying it on his shoulder, he kissed her, breathing incoherent words of pity and consolation.

She submitted a while, helpless with shock and amazement, and still shaken with the tempest of her own passion. But there came a moment when she pushed him away and tried desperately to recover herself.

‘I don’t know what you want — you’re not going to have anything to do with me now — you can’t. Let me alone — it will be over soon — one way or the other.’

And she sat upright, one hand clenched on her knees, her frowning brows drawn together, and the tears falling in spite of her intense effort to drive them back.

He found a painter’s stool, and sat down by her, pale and determined. He told her the history of his search; he implored her to be guided by him, to let him take her home to England and Manchester, where her story was unknown, save to Dora and John. He would make a home for her near his own; he would try to comfort her for the loss of her child; they would understand each other better, and the past should be buried.

Louie looked at him askance. Every now and then she ceased to listen to him at all; while, under the kindling of her own thoughts, her wild eyes flamed into fresh rage and agony.

[380]

‘Don’t! — leave me alone!’ she broke out at last, springing up. ‘I don’t want your help, I don’t want you; I only want him, — and I will have him, or we shall kill each other.’

She paced to and fro, her hands clasped on her breast, her white face setting into a ghastly calm. David gazed at her with horror. This was another note! one which in all their experience of each other he had never heard on her lips before. She loved this man! — this mean wretch, who had lived upon her and betrayed her, and, having got from her all she had to give, was probably just about to cast her off into the abyss which yawns for such women as Louie. He had thought of her flight to him before as the frenzy of a nature which must have distraction at any cost from the unfamiliar and intolerable weight of natural grief.

But this! — one moment it cut the roots from hope, the next it nerved him to more vigorous action.

‘You cannot have him,’ he said, steadily and sternly. ‘I have listened to the talk here for your sake — he is already on the point of deserting you — everyone else in this place knows that he is tired of you — that he is unfaithful to you.’

She dropped into her chair with a groan. Even her energies were spent — she was all but fainting — and her miserable heart knew, with more certainty than David himself did, that all he said was true.

Her unexpected weakness, the collapse of her strained nerves, filled him with fresh hopes. He came

[381]

close to her again and pleaded, by the memory of her child, of their father — that she would yield, and go away with him at once.

‘What should I do’ — she broke in passionately, her sense of opposition of absurdity reviving her, ‘when I get to your hateful Manchester? Go to church and say my prayers! And you? In a week or two, I tell you, you would be sick of having soiled your hands with such *mud*, as I am.’

She threw herself back in her chair with a superb gesture, and folded her arms, looking him defiance.

‘Try me,’ he said quietly, while his lip trembled. ‘I am not as I was, Louie. There are things one can only learn by going down — down — into the depths — of sorrow. The night before Lucy died — she could hardly speak — she sent you a message: “I wish I had been kinder — ask her to come to Manchester when I am gone.” I have not seen her die — not seen her whole life turn to love — through such unspeakable suffering — for nothing. Oh Louie — when we submit ourselves to God — when we ask for His life — and give up our own — then and then only, there is peace — and strength. We ourselves are nothing — creatures of passion — miserable — weak — but in Him and through Him ‘

His voice broke. He took her cold hand and pressed it tenderly. She trembled, in spite of herself, and closed her eyes.

‘Don’t — I know all about that — why did the child die? There is no God — nothing. It’s just talk. I

[382]

told Him what I’d do — I vowed I’d go to the bad, for good and all — and I have. There — let me alone!’

But he only held her hand tighter.

‘No! — never! Your trouble was awful — it might well drive you mad. But others have suffered, Louie — no less — and yet have believed — have hoped. It is not beyond our power — for it has been done again and again! — by the most weak, the most miserable. Oh! think of that — tear yourself first from the evil life — and you, too, will know what it is to be consoled — to be strengthened. The mere effort to come with me — I promise it you! — will bring you healing and comfort. We make for ourselves the promise of eternal life, by turning to the good. Then the hope of recovering our dear ones, — which was nothing to us before, — rises and roots itself in our heart. Come with me, — conquer yourself, — let us begin to love each other truly, give me comfort and yourself — and you will bear to think again of Cecile and of God — there will be calm and peace beyond this pain.’

His eyes shone upon her through a mist. She said no more for a while. She lay exhausted and silent, the tears streaming once more down her haggard cheeks.

Then, thinking she had consented, he began to speak of arrangements for the journey — of the possibility of getting across the forest.

Instantly her passion returned. She sprang up and put him away from her.

[383]

‘It is ridiculous, I tell you — ridiculous! How can I decide in such an instant? You must go away and leave me to think.’

‘No,’ he said firmly, ‘my only chance is to stay with you.’

She walked up and down, saying wild incoherent things to herself under her breath. She wore the red dress she had worn at Manchester — now a torn and shabby rag — and over it, because of the cold, a long black cloak, a relic of better days. Her splendid hair, uncombed and dishevelled, hung almost loose round her head and neck; and the emaciation of face and figure made her height and slenderness more abnormal than ever as she swept tempestuously to and fro.

At last she paused in front of him.

‘Well, I dare say I’ll go with you,’ she said, with the old reckless note. ‘That fiend thinks he has me in his power for good, he amuses himself with threats of leaving me — perhaps I’ll turn the tables. . . . But you must go — go for an hour. You can find out about a carriage. There will be an old woman here presently for the house-work. I’ll get her to help me pack. You’ll only be in the way.’

‘You’ll be ready for me in an hour?’ he said, rising reluctantly.

‘Well, it don’t look, does it, as if there was much to pack in this hole!’ she said with one of her wild laughs.

He looked round for the first time and saw a long

[384]

bare studio, containing a table covered with etcher's apparatus and some blocks for wood engraving. There was besides an easel, and a picture upon it, with a pretentious historical subject just blocked in, a tall oak chair and stool of antique pattern, and in one corner a stand of miscellaneous arms such as many artists affect — an old flintlock gun or two, some Moorish or Spanish rapiers and daggers. The north window was half blocked by snow, and the atmosphere of the place, in spite of the stove, was freezing.

He moved to the door, loth, most loth, to go, yet well aware, by long experience, of the danger of crossing her temper or her whims. After all, it would take him some time to make his arrangements with the landlord, and he would be back to the moment.

She watched him intently with her poor red eyes. She herself opened the door for him, and to his amazement put a sudden hand on his arm, and kissed him — roughly, vehemently, with lips that burnt.

‘Oh, you fool!’ she said, ‘you fool!’

‘What do you mean?’ he said, stopping. ‘I believe I am a fool, Louie, to leave you for a moment.’

‘Nonsense! You are a fool to want to take me to Manchester, and I am a fool to think of going. There: — if I had never been born! — oh! go, for God's sake, go I and come back in an hour. I *must* have some time, I tell you — ‘and she gave a passionate stamp — ‘to think a bit, and put my things together.’

She pushed him out, and shut the door. With a great effort he mastered himself and went.

[385]

He made all arrangements for the two-horse sledge that was to take them to Fontainebleau. He called for his bill, and paid it. Then he hung about the entrance to the forest, looking with an unseeing eye at the tricks which the snow had been playing with the trees, at the gleams which a pale and struggling sun was shedding over the white world — till his watch told him it was time.

He walked briskly back to the cottage, opened the outer door, was astonished to hear neither voice nor movement, to see nothing of the charwoman Louie had spoken of — rushed to the studio and entered.

She sat in the tall chair, her hands dropping over the arms, her head hanging forward. The cold snow-light shone on her open and glazing eyes — on the red and black of her dress, on the life-stream dripping among the folds, on the sharp curved Algerian dagger at her feet. She was quite dead. Even in the midst of his words of hope, the thought of self-destruction — of her mother — had come upon her and absorbed her. That capacity for sudden intolerable despair which she had inherited, rose to its full height when she had driven David from her — guided her mad steps, her unshrinking hand.

He knelt by her — called for help, laid his ear to her heart, her lips. Then the awfulness of the shock, and of his self-reproach, the crumbling of all his hopes, became too much to bear. Consciousness left him, and when the woman of whom Louie had spoken did actually

[386]

come in, a few minutes later, she found the brother lying against the sister's knee, his arms outstretched across her, while the dead Louie, with fixed and frowning brows, sat staring beyond him into eternity — a figure of wild fate — freed at last and for ever from that fierce burden of herself.

[NP]

EPILOGUE

[NP]

Alas! — Alas!

But to part from David Grieve under the impression of this scene of wreck and moral defeat would be to misread and misjudge a life, destined, notwithstanding the stress of exceptional suffering it was called upon at one time to pass through, to singularly rich and fruitful issues. Time, kind inevitable Time, dulled the paralysing horror of his sister's death, and softened the memory of all that long torture of publicity, legal investigation, and the like, which had followed it. The natural healing 'in widest commonalty spread,' which flows from affection, nature, and the direction of the mind to high and liberating aims, came to him also as the months and years passed. His wife's death, his sister's tragedy, left indeed indelible marks; but, though scarred and changed, he was in the end neither crippled nor unhappy. The moral experience of life had built up in him a faith which endured, and the pangs of his own pity did but bring him at last to rest the more surely on a pity beyond man's. During the nights of semi-delirium which followed the scene at Barbizon, John, who watched him, heard him repeat again and again words which seemed

[390]

to have a talismanic power over his restlessness. 'Neither do I condemn thee. Come, and sin no more.' They were fragments dropped from what was clearly a nightmare of anguish and struggle; but they testified to a set of character, they threw light on the hopes and convictions which ultimately repossessed themselves of the sound man.

Two years passed. It was Christmas Eve. The firm of Grieve & Co. in Prince's Street was shut for the holiday, and David Grieve, a mile or two away, was sitting over his study fire with a book. He closed it presently, and sat thinking.

There was a knock at his door. When he opened it he found Dora outside. It was Dora, in the quasi-sister's garb she had assumed of late — serge skirt, long black cloak, and bonnet tied with white muslin strings under the throat. In her parish visiting among the worst slums of Ancoats, she had found such a dress useful.

'I brought Sandy's present,' she said, looking round her cautiously. 'Is his stocking hung up?'

‘No! or the rascal would never go to sleep to-night. He is nearly wild about his presents as it is. Give it to me. It shall go into my drawer, and I will arrange everything when I go to bed to-night.’

He looked at the puzzle-map she had brought with a childish pleasure, and between them they locked it away carefully in a drawer of the writing-table.

[391]

‘Do sit down and get warm,’ he said to her, pushing forward a chair.

‘Oh no! I must go back to the church. We shall be decorating till late to-night. But I had to be in Broughton, so I brought this on my way home.’

‘Then Sandy and I will escort you, if you will have us. He made me promise to take him to see the shops. I suppose Market Street is a sight.’

He went outside to shout to Sandy, who was having his tea, to get ready, and then came back to Dora. She was standing by the fire looking at an engagement tablet filled with entries, on the mantelpiece.

‘Father Russell says they have been asking you again to stand for Parliament,’ she said timidly, as he came in.

‘Yes, there is a sudden vacancy. Old Jacob Cherritt is dead.’

‘And you won’t?’

He shook his head.

‘No,’ he said, after a pause. ‘I am not their man, they would be altogether disappointed in me.’

She understood the sad reverie of the face, and said no more.

No. For new friends, new surroundings, efforts of another type, his power was now irrevocably gone; he shrank more than ever from the egotisms of competition. But within the old lines he had recovered an abundant energy. Among his workmen; amid the details now fortunate, now untoward, of his labours for

[392]

the solution of certain problems of industrial ethics; in the working of the remarkable pamphlet scheme dealing with social and religious fact, which was fast making his name famous in the ears of the England which thinks and labours; and in the self-devoted help of the unhappy; he was developing more and more the idealist's qualities, and here and there — inevitably — the idealist's mistakes. His face, as middle life was beginning to shape it — with its subtle and sensitive beauty — was at once the index of his strength and his limitations.

He and Dora stood talking a while about certain public schemes that were in progress for the bettering of Ancoats. Then he said with sudden emphasis:

‘*Ah!* if one could but jump a hundred years and see what England will be like! But these northern towns, and this northern life, on the whole fill one with hope. There is a strong social spirit and strong individualities to work on.’

Dora was silent. From her Churchwoman's point of view the prospect was not so bright.

‘Well, people seem to think that co-operation is going to do everything,’ she said vaguely.

‘We all cry our own nostrums,’ he said, laughing; ‘what cooperation has done up here in the north is wonderful! It has been the making of thousands. But the world is not going to give itself over wholly to committees. There will be room enough for the one-man-power at any rate for generations to come.’

[393]

What we want is leaders; but leaders who will feel themselves “members of one body,” instruments of one social order.’

They stood together a minute in silence; then he went out to the stairs and called: ‘Sandy, you monkey, come along!’

Sandy came shouting and leaping downstairs, as lithe and handsome as ever, and as much of a compound of the elf and the philosopher.

‘I know Auntie Dora’s brought me a present,’ he said, looking up into her face, — ‘but father’s locked it up!’

David chased him out of doors with contumely, and they all took the tram to Victoria Street.

Once there, Sandy was in the seventh heaven. The shops were ablaze with lights, and gay with every Christmas joy; the pavements were crowded with a buying and gaping throng. He pulled at his father’s hand, exclaiming here and pointing there, till David, dragged hither and thither, had caught some of the boy’s mirth and pleasure.

But Dora walked apart. Her heart was a little heavy and dull, her face weary. In reality, though David’s deep and tender gratitude and friendship towards her could not express themselves too richly, she felt, as the years went on, more and more divided from him and Sandy. She was horrified at the things which David published, or said in public; she had long dropped any talk with the child on all those subjects

[394]

which she cared for most. Young as he was, the boy showed a marvellous understanding in some ways of his father’s mind, and there were moments when she felt a strange and dumb irritation towards them both.

Christmas too, in spite of her Christian fervour, had always its sadness for her. It reminded her of her father, and of the loneliness of her personal life.

‘How father would have liked all this crowd!’ she said once to David as they passed into Market Street.

David assented with instant sympathy, and they talked a little of the vanished wanderer as they walked along, she with a yearning passion which touched him profoundly.

He and Sandy escorted her up the Ancoats High Street, and at last they turned into her own road. Instantly Dora perceived a little crowd round her door, and, as soon as she was seen, a waving of hands and a Babel of voices.

‘What is it?’ she cried, paling, and began to run.

David and Sandy followed. She had already flown upstairs; but the shawled mill-girls, round the door, flushed with excitement, shouted their news into his ear.

‘It’s her feyther, sir, as ha coom back after aw these years — an he’s sittin by the fire quite nat’ral like, Mary Styles says — and they put him in a mad-house in furrin parts, they did — an his hair’s quite white — and oh! sir, yo mun just goo up an look.’

Pushed by eager hands, and still holding Sandy,

[395]

David, though half unwilling, climbed the narrow- stairs.

The door was half open. And there, in his old chair, sat Daddy, his snow-white hair falling on his shoulders, a childish excitement and delight on his blanched face. Dora was kneeling at his feet, her head on his knees, sobbing.

David took Sandy up in his arms.

‘Be quiet, Sandy; don’t say a word.’

And he carried him downstairs again, and into the midst of the eager crowd.

‘I think,’ he said, addressing them, ‘I would go home if I were you — if you love her.’

They looked at his shining eyes and twitching lips, and understood.

‘Aye, sir, aye, sir, yo’re abeawt reet — we’st not trouble her, sir.’

He carried his boy home, Sandy raining questions in a tumult of excitement. Then when the child was put to bed he sat on in his lonely study, stirred to his sensitive depths by the thought of Dora’s long waiting and sad sudden joy — by the realisation of the Christmas crowds and merriment — by the sharp memory of his own dead. Towards midnight, when all was still, he opened the locked drawer which held for him the few things which symbolised and summed up his past — a portrait of Lucy, by the river under the trees, taken by a travelling photographer, not more than six

[396]

weeks before her death — a little collection of pictures of Sandy from babyhood onwards — Louie's breviary — his father's dying letter — a book which had belonged to Ancrum, his vanished friend. But though he took thence his wife's picture, communing awhile, in a passion of yearning, with its weary plaintive eyes, he did not allow himself to sink for long into the languor of memory and grief. He knew the perils of his own nature, and there was in him a stern sense of the difficulty of living aright, and the awfulness of the claim made by God and man on the strength and will of the individual. It seemed to him that he had been 'taught of God' through natural affection, through repentance, through sorrow, through the constant energies of the intellect. Never had the Divine voice been clearer to him, or the Divine Fatherhood more real. Freely he had received — but only that he might freely give. On this Christmas night he renewed every past vow of the soul, and in so doing rose once more into that state and temper which is man's pledge and earnest of immortality — since already, here and now, it is the eternal life begun.

THE END

PRINTED BY

SPOTTISWOODE AND CO., NEW-STREET SQUARE

LONDON

